

2005

An intimate monument (re)-narrating 'the troubles' in Northern Ireland: the Irish Linen Memorial 2001-2005

Lycia Danielle Trouton
University of Wollongong

Recommended Citation

Trouton, Lycia D, An intimate monument (re)-narrating 'the troubles' in Northern Ireland: the Irish Linen Memorial 2001-2005, DCA thesis, Faculty of Creative Arts, University of Wollongong, 2005. <http://ro.uow.edu.au/theses/779>

NOTE

This online version of the thesis may have different page formatting and pagination from the paper copy held in the University of Wollongong Library.

UNIVERSITY OF WOLLONGONG

COPYRIGHT WARNING

You may print or download ONE copy of this document for the purpose of your own research or study. The University does not authorise you to copy, communicate or otherwise make available electronically to any other person any copyright material contained on this site. You are reminded of the following:

Copyright owners are entitled to take legal action against persons who infringe their copyright. A reproduction of material that is protected by copyright may be a copyright infringement. A court may impose penalties and award damages in relation to offences and infringements relating to copyright material. Higher penalties may apply, and higher damages may be awarded, for offences and infringements involving the conversion of material into digital or electronic form.

**An
Intimate
Monument**

An Intimate Monument (re)-narrating ‘the troubles’ in Northern Ireland: *The Irish Linen Memorial* 2001 – 2005

A thesis submitted in partial fulfilment of the requirements for the award of the degree

Doctor of Creative Arts

University of Wollongong

Lycia Danielle Trouton

1991 Master of Fine Arts (Sculpture), Cranbrook Academy of Art, Bloomfield Hills, Michigan, USA

1988 Bachelor of Fine Arts (Hons) (Sculpture), Carnegie Mellon University, Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, USA

1997 Licentiate Teacher’s Diploma (Speech and Drama) Trinity College London

1985 Associate Teacher’s Diploma (Speech and Drama) Trinity College London

The Faculty of Creative Arts 2005

Certification

I, Lycia Danielle Trouton, declare that this thesis, submitted in partial fulfilment of the requirements for the award of Doctor of Creative Arts, in the Faculty of Creative Arts, University of Wollongong, is wholly my own work unless otherwise referenced or acknowledged. The document has not been submitted for qualifications at any other academic institution.

Lycia Danielle Trouton

Date _____



Figure 1: Australian Indigenous artist Yvonne Koolmatrie (left) with Diana Wood Conroy, 2002
Adelaide Festival of the Arts, South Australia.

Woven Together

The wider political fabric is composed of like and unlike groups of people woven together. The comedy of Aristophanes' *Lysistrata* had analysed the various parts of the carding, spinning and weaving of wool as a way of resolving bitter conflict. In all the struggles for political control in the Hellenistic and early Roman period weaving could still be a 'sign' that demonstrated the bringing together of dissimilar elements – warp and weft... (1999:126)

From 'Oblivion and Metamorphosis: Australian Weavers in Relation to Ancient Artefacts from Cyprus'

By Diana Wood Conroy, *Reinventing Textiles Vol.1: Tradition and Innovation*

(ed. Sue Rowley)

Care

Care is the thread that weaves through the disjunctures of a divided society (1998:55).

From 'Identity, Location, Plurality; Women, Nationalism and Northern Ireland'

By Elisabeth Porter, *Women, Ethnicity and Nationalism: The Politics of Transition*

(ed.s Rick Wilford and Robert L. Miller)



Figure 2: First exhibition of *The Irish Memorial: Between Worlds – The Common Body*, September 7, 2001, USA.

Thanks to The Canada Council for the Arts, 2001, & The Canadian High Commission, Canberra, ACT, 2004.

Dedication

To my first Fine Arts teachers who encouraged me to pursue my ‘calling’ at a young age –

Carolyn Kramer, Painter

Otis College of Art and Design, Los Angeles, California, USA

BS(Art Ed) Kent State University, Ohio, USA

Gay Wisdom (nee Scrivener), Actress

In memory 1914-2000

The Old Vic Theatre School, London, UK

Hon. FTCL, FTCL, LTCL (Honorary Fellow, Fellow, Licentiate) Trinity College London, UK

and

To my relatives and friends in Northern Ireland who live with trauma.

Time

The side bar of this book lists all the names of those killed,
following the updated 2001 publication of *Lost Lives:
The Stories of the Men, Women and Children who died
as a Result of the Northern Ireland Troubles*
by David McKittrick, Seamus Kelters, Brian Feeney and Chris Thornton.

**The time code, which also substitutes as a page number,
represents the time it takes to read aloud one column of names per page.**

For assistance with the design and technical requirements of this document, my thanks go to:

Stan Gielewski, BSc (Eng) of *Cre8rix*

Tiffany Patten BI Arch (Hons.)

Steve Perrett, PhD (Psych.) and computer coach

Wes Wickham, MCA of *No Logo Design Co.*



Figure 3: Map of Ireland and Northern Ireland

TABLE of CONTENTS

| | |
|---|-------------|
| ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS..... | xiii |
| Abstract | 1 |
| Introduction | 3 |
| Background to my concept development of <i>The ILM</i> | 3 |
| The Creative Project..... | 4 |
| Chapter 1 My Creative Project: <i>The Irish Linen Memorial</i> | 8 |
| Descriptive Details | 19 |
| Details of technical processes and international collaboration..... | 20 |
| Interdisciplinary collaborative work with <i>The ILM</i> (see accompanying booklet, DVD) | 21 |
| Conclusion | 21 |
| Endnotes..... | 24 |
| Chapter 2 Northern Ireland Context: A brief overview of the troubles, 1968 – 98: feminist (re)imaginings of political communities in Northern Ireland..... | 31 |
| Introduction | 32 |
| Northern Ireland (N.I) Context | 33 |
| Northern Ireland Contemporary Ethnography | 36 |
| The Construction of Violence and a Feminist Cartography of the Dead | 37 |
| Nationalism | 39 |
| Feminism and Nationalism | 40 |
| <i>The ILM</i> as a feminist cultural project utilizing ‘soft’ power..... | 42 |
| Brief Artist Case Study: Kathy Pendergrast and the Cartography of Loss..... | 43 |
| Conclusion | 45 |
| Endnotes..... | 46 |
| Chapter 3 Material Culture Context: Irish Linen, a cultural history of a memorial fabric | 50 |
| Linen and Flax in Northern Ireland..... | 54 |
| The poetics of linen | 64 |
| Conclusion | 72 |
| Endnotes..... | 74 |
| Case Studies | 78 |
| Chapter 4 Public Needlework Projects led by Women Artists | 78 |
| Description of Artwork: <i>The Ribbon around the Pentagon</i> , 1982-5. | 82 |
| Description of Artwork: <i>The Crystal Quilt</i> , 1987 | 84 |
| Description of Performance: <i>Women-in-Black</i> , 1988 – ongoing..... | 87 |
| Conclusion | 88 |
| Endnotes..... | 90 |
| Chapter 5 Narelle Jubelin: delicate petit point materiality critiques national identity..... | 91 |
| Introduction | 91 |
| Jubelin as Painter | 93 |

| | |
|---|------------|
| Jubelin as Needleworker: ‘From Mere to Middle’ | 97 |
| Jubelin and Touch | 104 |
| Conclusion | 106 |
| Endnotes..... | 108 |
| Chapter 6 Richard Serra: site-conscious sculpture place-makes the chiasma of a national public site..... | 110 |
| Introduction | 110 |
| Descriptive Analysis of <i>Tilted Arc</i> | 116 |
| Application to the Northern Ireland Context..... | 119 |
| Conclusion | 122 |
| Endnotes..... | 124 |
| Chapter 7 | 125 |
| Maya Lin’s Visual Poetry, 1982 – 1993..... | 125 |
| Introduction..... | 125 |
| Personal Background of ‘Anonymous Entry 1026’ ³ | 126 |
| Counter-monument or intimate, hybrid memorial | 126 |
| Reconciliatory Monument: <i>The Vietnam Veterans Memorial</i> , 1981..... | 127 |
| A Greek Theatre..... | 128 |
| Chronology of Names | 130 |
| A Greek Epic..... | 130 |
| An Interface of a Touchable Name | 131 |
| Citing a Timeline of Events: <i>The Civil Rights Memorial</i> , 1988..... | 133 |
| Descriptive Numbers: <i>The Women’s Table</i> , 1993..... | 134 |
| Plurally-Sited Memorials ⁸ | 136 |
| Conclusion | 137 |
| Endnotes..... | 139 |
| Chapter 8 Doris Salcedo: the sculptor as secondary witness to the witness of trauma or death | 141 |
| Introduction..... | 141 |
| The Artwork..... | 144 |
| The Orphan’s Tunic | 145 |
| Conclusion | 150 |
| Endnotes..... | 152 |
| Conclusion..... | 154 |
| Main Artistic Findings in relation to <i>The ILM</i> and <i>Mending</i> : | 161 |
| Main Conceptual or Theoretical Findings in relation to the Creative Project:..... | 163 |
| Postscript: The Influence of my personal journey: | 167 |
| IRISH GLOSSARY | 171 |
| BIBLIOGRAPHY | 173 |
| List of Figures | 189 |
| Appendices | 197 |

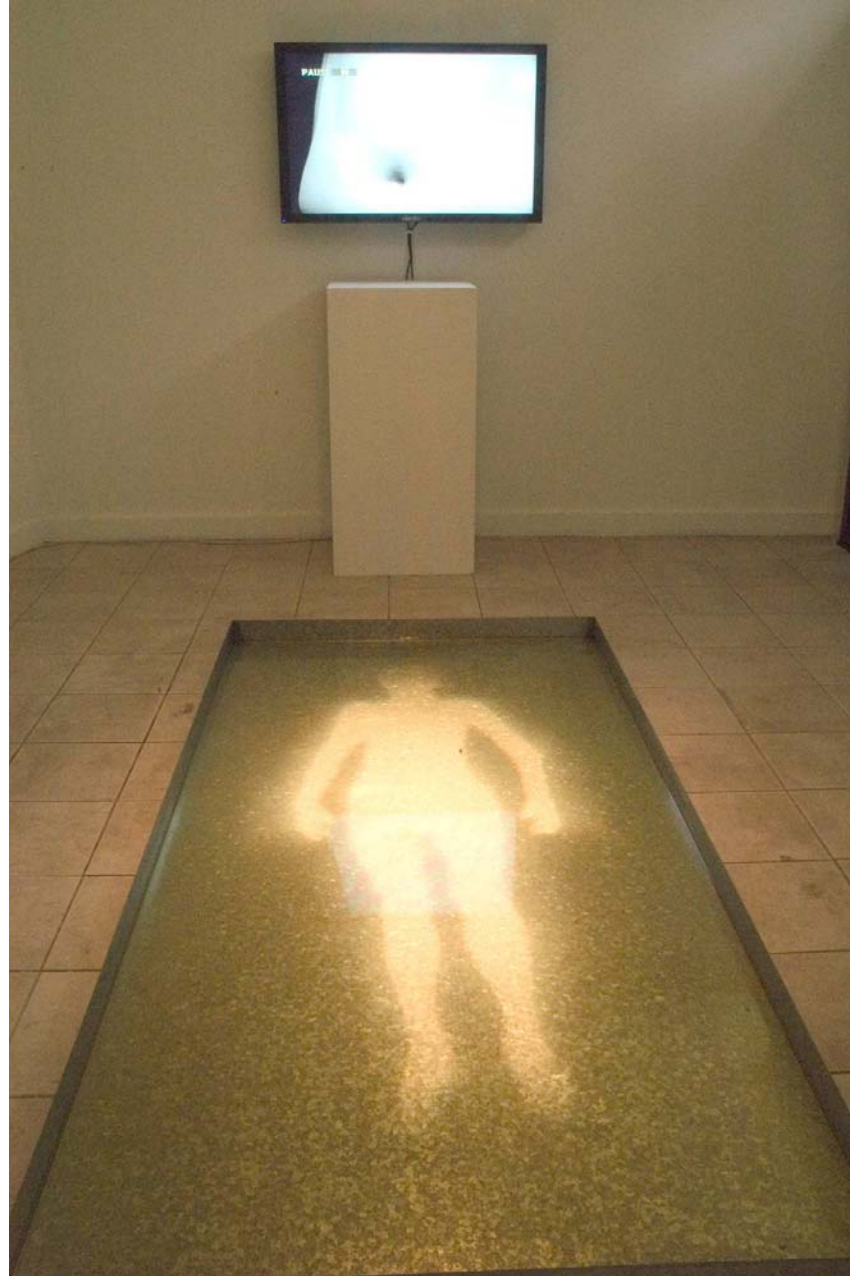


Figure 4: Solo thesis exhibition, accompanying installation: *The Mending Room*,
Materials: galvanised steel tray, vegetable oil, projected moving image on large format LCD monitor (above):
a work entitled, *Breathing*. University of Wollongong, February 2005. Photo: Sean Maguire.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

As an artist, the *University Postgraduate Award* (UPA) and the *International Postgraduate Research Scholarship* (IPRS) has given me the opportunity to study in Australia and the reflective time to research, dialogue with colleagues and have a flexible writing schedule.

I wish to thank my parents, who helped and encouraged me to pursue postgraduate studies at university. In late 2002, additional funds gave me the opportunity for research-travel, the ability to attend art-theatre events and ease with which to document and coordinate my studies. Being self-sufficient has allowed me the independent living needed for my thesis exegesis, as well as studio practice. These benefits have encouraged in me, as author Sharyn Rohlfson Udall, on writing about female creativity, 2000, states:

[T]he ability to carve out a space in her life where she feels free to pursue certain subjects and to achieve a degree of autonomy.

This thesis has been influenced by my involvement as a research assistant for three years, 2001 to early 2004, with the Australian Research Council (ARC) large grant project called, *The Fabric(ation)s of the Postcolonial*. This interdepartmental research was a venture between Creative Arts (textiles and material culture) and English (specifically Commonwealth literature and Postcolonial studies, feminism/women's literature and cultural studies) departments under the research streams of the Institute of Cultural Difference, (ICD), the Institute of Society and Cultural Identity (ISCCI), and the Cultural Research Performance and Text, (CRIPT).

My advisors for the assistant research position were Paul Sharrad (literature, cultural studies, trade, identity and nation), Diana Wood-Conroy (tapestry, textiles and archaeology), Dorothy Jones, Honorary Fellow (literature, feminism, embroidery, Canadian and Australian studies), and Anne Collett (literature, feminism, performance, Canadian and Irish studies). There were two inspiring visits by Janis Jefferies, Goldsmiths College, University of London. Jefferies was the keynote conference speaker, December, 2002 and launched the *Fabrics of Change* exhibition, February, 2004. I will remember with fondness Jefferies' feminist and intercultural political concerns, lateral thinking, and her sense of humour. She is a tireless pioneering spirit regarding a cultural paradigm shift for the elevated status of textiles in avant-garde art. Conference proceedings were published in *Reinventing Textiles: Postcolonialism and Creativity*, Vol 3, by Telos Art Publishing, Bristol, UK.

In 2002-3, Canadians, Jill Baird, Museum of Anthropology, University of British Columbia, Canada, and Vivienne Campbell, Musqueam-Coast Salish weaver, extended their kindness and expertise in Vancouver, B.C. and in Wollongong, NSW.

My online dialogue with Jessica Hemmings, PhD, textile theorist, USA.

Jacky Redgate, with whom I share the spatial concerns she has mastered with photography-sculpture, for her guidance 2002- 5. Sue Blanchfield (*Tracking Cloth* exhibition and symposium, 2004), for her advising in 2001; Liz Jeneid and Graham Bartholemew, Alexander Ian Arcus, Kay Lawrence, OAM, (*Intertwine* forum at the Adelaide Festival of Arts, 2002) and Ruth Hadlow who were very hospitable to me as a newcomer in the country.

The staff of the Faculty of Creative Arts for their administrative and technical support, including Dale Dumpleton, Creative Arts, and Christine Novotny, English, for their warmth and thoughtfulness.

Professors Merlinda Bobis, creative writing, for her advice; Stephen Ingham, Greg Schiemer, musician-composers, for their encouragement; Robert Sparrow, ethical philosophy, for critical dialogue in early 2003. Student Services: Audrey Lowrie, for her reminders about how to retain my passion and Meeta Chatterjee, MA, for her support.

Artists I met or studied with at the University, many of them fellow émigrés or nomads:

Abdul Rahman Abdullah (Malaysia-Australia), Marée Azzopardi (Malta-Australia), Maria Peña Briceño (Colombia), cultural theorist Marta Cabrera, PhD, (Bogotá, Colombia); choreographer-dancer Elizabeth Cameron Dalman, OAM, (Australia); composer Thomas Fitzgerald (Australia); writer and jeweller, Luz Hincapié (New York, USA-Colombia); Marianne Hulsbosch, PhD, (Ambonese textile theorist); Playwright Dhananjaya Karunarathne (Sri Lanka); Velda Maevali (post-war migrant, Estonia, – domestic needleworker) and her son, Kalev (photo-archivist); Chin Ming 'Jimmy' Lee (Taiwan); Lan Lu (China-Australia); Hilary Rhodes (S. Africa-Australia); Wes Wickham (Canada-Australia); Shen An 'Victor' Yang, deceased December 31, 2002, (Taiwan); Undergraduates: Bodie O'Dell, Kairo, Natasha Younie; Ziik Savu/Kirsti Liisi Mariaana Väliano, (Finland-Australia).

The Wollongong University Postgraduate Association council and staff members, 2001 – 2005.

Curators Matthew and Maxine Lennon, USA, of Horsehead International Projects, who invited me to exhibit in Belfast, 1999, and the British Columbia Council of the Arts, Canada, which made the trip possible.

Curators Dominique Mico; Jason Hugonnet and his staff at CraftACT Gallery, Canberra, February, 2004

Nicholas Tsoutas, Director and his staff at Artspace, Woolloomooloo, Sydney and the NSW Government grant which made my residency possible, December 2002 – June 2003.

The tireless advocates of the intercultural arts in Melbourne: Fotis Kapetopoulos, Director of the Multicultural Arts Professional Development Program, (2003-4) and Peter Mousaferiadis, composer-director-producer. Organisational leadership: Chris Booth, Royal Melbourne Institute of Technology (RMIT), Australia.

Other colleagues in Australia:

Julia Bovard for her friendship and insight into Northern Irish Protestant migration to the Illawarra and for her mother's inspiring modernist painting, Leba Bovard; Michael and Doris Hobbs for their hospitality; Lily Lynn for her hospitality and dialogue; Dennis Mortimer, painter; Liz Murphy, (b. Belfast), poet, for dialogue about Belfast; Tiffany Patten, interior architect; Therese (Tess) Bernadette Sweeney, photographer/filmmaker-community historian; Johdi Zutt, videographer/new media artist. Also to Graeme Stentiford and David Leffley for their technical support and friendship. To the supportive friendship of Conor and Tania Bradley (b. N. Ireland) of The Friends of Ireland, Canberra, ACT; Margaret Barman (b. N. Ireland), needleworker, Sydney, NSW.

Persons who have supported my creative and educational journey over the years:

The dedicated teachers at Crofton House School, Vancouver, B.C., especially Moira Schulte (b. Scotland) physics and filmmaking-video art.

My first art history professor, Paula Radisich, at Whittier College, near Los Angeles, California, whose inspiring classes often took us to the J. Paul Getty museum in Malibu, California, U.S.A.

Drama professors at Whittier College: Jack DeVries and Robert Tresor, also Whittier College.

My first cultural theory professor, who became a mentor, Richard (Dick) Schoenwald, (now deceased), Carnegie Mellon University.

Drawing professor Mary Wiedner, 1985-6, Carnegie Mellon University.

My training in sculpture, 1985-91: especially Sam Gilliam (painter-sculptor) and Douglas Pickering (now deceased), at Carnegie Mellon University. Michael Hall at Cranbrook Academy of Art, Detroit, Michigan. Architects with whom I've worked over the years: Lynne Gilroy, Ray and Mary Johnston, Nakano and Associates, landscape architects, David Scott-Risner (design-build), Mel Streeter and Associates, Robert Smith, Seattle, USA; my father, Robert Wakefield Trouton (ARIBA).

Also, Environmental Engineer, Ian Theaker, Canada.

The energetic trades-women who had interdisciplinary careers, shared their strength, and taught me never to give up:

Geraldine Finegan, all-around maintenance-hand/now an ordained Buddhist nun: 'Chong Do' Sunim, Cambridge, 1988 onwards; Linda Machia, journeyman (United Brotherhood of Carpenters and Joiners: UBC)/solicitor, with whom I worked with in construction in 1994 on the Seattle waterfront; Mary Madonis, journeyman (UBC)/textile artist and chaplain, 1989 onwards; Linda Sheets, professional singer and plumber, Cambridge, MA. 1988; Kathy Thom, journeyman (UBC) former fire-fighter and artist, Vancouver, B.C. Canada, 1993; University of Wollongong lecturer Georgine Clarsen, car mechanic/PhD, feminist-historian, 2005.

My colleagues overseas who have been with me in spirit, and online, over the last few years:

Gloria Feman Orenstein, PhD, for ongoing inspiration about the canon of feminist-matristic art.
The Northwest Women's Art Caucus, branch of the National Women's Art Caucus, Seattle, U.S.A., 1993-present: Barbara Bruch, Alice Dubiel, Cheryl Hahn, Susan Platt, PhD. Betsy Damon, international public artist, and her leadership in the 'No Limits for Women in the Arts' group, 1993-98.
Cathy Chase, Lena Star Helen, Jane Keating, Portland, Oregon, USA;
Denise Golemlaski, project Manager, Theatre, Canada.
Pat Caver, organisational leadership mentor, USA.
Benjamin Mitchell, writer-curator, USA.
David Schine, writer- businessman, Vancouver, B.C., Canada.
Sally Kaplan (b. Belfast), sculptor, especially during my years in Detroit.

My extended family:

Supporting me from Queensland Road, 'Little Australia,' in Vancouver, B.C: My mother, M.Ed, special education teacher, for her utilitarian needlework and my father, Dip. Arch (Birm), RAIC, RIBA, AIBC, for his architectural sketches and proofreading of names list.

From London, England: my uncle Ritchie McGladdery, who tells me stories of my maternal grandparents, and my aunt Margot Damon (née McGladdery) for embroidering the names on the handkerchiefs since 2003, supportive to me in many ways since I was a child.

My grandmothers Evelyn Jean McGladdery (née Gibson), b. Lochmaben, Scotland; Froebel-trained school teacher. Dora Jane Trouton (née Harbinson), b. Rathfriland, County Down, Northern Ireland: dress and gown buyer for two large shops, Arnott's and Bank Buildings, in Belfast, and mender in the home setting.

My maternal grandfather, (Daniel) Ritchie McGladdery, World War II veteran; senator, including parliamentary secretary/deputy leader of the house, Northern Ireland parliament under Prime Ministers: Brookeborough, O'Neill, Chichester-Clark, and Faulkner.

My sister Konia Jane Trouton, MD, with whom I share a commitment to public life and social justice that we learned from our mother.

The Caldwell family, especially Irene, in Canada.

To the talented bodyworker-massage therapists who have supported my journey through 'intimate touch' with a 'licence to touch' and from whom I learned the wisdom of the body and memory, the processes to trust myself and how to keep my inner creative spirit alive:

- in Vancouver, B.C. Aruvedic practitioners in 2000: Tom Kratzer, Brooke MacDonald; and Yodhi Williamson, 2000 onwards; Rosen-method practitioner and textile artist, Hillary Mackey, 1993-2000, Vancouver, B.C.; Pat Archer, Barbara Spargo (RN, BSN), and Liz Patras, energetic bodywork, Seattle, WA, 2001; Liz Ryder, maia fascia release, Sydney, 2004-5; Ka Huna practitioner, Andrew Whittaker, 2002-4, Wollongong, NSW.

For the healing guidance-friendship of:

Barbara Sachs, PhD, 1998-1999; Araina, Jean Burgess, Cassandra, Jean Hebden, Jaisri, Marg Mahan.

Trauma specialists in E.M.D.R (eye movement desensitization reprocessing), Canada and Australia: Mark Grant, Ulrich Lanius, Audrey Jones.

In conclusion:

Thanks go to my advisor, Diana Wood Conroy, tapestry/archaeology/ethnography, for her feminist viewpoint, her generosity as an educationalist, introducing me to her network of colleagues, and her patience in guiding me with a quiet sense of humour. Thanks to Jacky Redgate for the extra sessions in Sydney, especially at the Arte Povera exhibit, Museum of Contemporary Art 2002, at The Gunnery and about Narelle Jubelin's practice. Thanks to Dorothy Jones and Paul Sharrad, English department, for their steady support in the disciplined craft of writing. Also, thanks to Anne Collett, English studies and Gerry Turcotte, English and the Centre for Canadian-Australian Studies for their encouragement.

This period of my studies has involved a certain passage of mourning and grieving. During this time I developed a sculptural commission for a private memorial garden in Seattle, Washington, USA, to Cameron Miles Smith, 1960-1996, son of Bob and Akemi Smith.



Figure 5: Visit to studio-home of Musqueam/Coast Salish weaver, Vivian Campbell (center), with Jill Baird (left) from the Museum of Anthropology, and Lycia Trouton (right), Vancouver, B.C., Canada. 2003 (photo: L. Trouton)



Figure 6: My father, Robert Trouton, with a sculptural detail from The Greek Theatre site of my 'labyrinth' installation, Cranbrook Educational Grounds, Bloomfield Hills, Michigan, U.S.A, 1991.



Figure 7: Installing one of two compressed peat moss (Irish Bog Oak) columns: Lycia (left) with Hendrick Miller (right), at the entrance of the Seattle Centre House, U.S.A., 2000.



Figure 8: Lycia, with mother, Maureen Trouton (centre), and Edith Morriott (right) needleworker, after the opening of the exhibition in Canberra, ACT, 2004. (photo: Thomas Fitzgerald)



Figure 9: Working with pins and rubbings during residency at The Gunnery studios, Artspace, Sydney, 2004.



Figure 10: *Fabric(ation)s of the Postcolonial* conference Dec. 2002. Dr. Dorothy Jones (L), artists Kay Lawrence, (centre), Janis Jefferies (R)

Abstract

The Irish Linen Memorial creative project is an ongoing site-conscious memorial-installation which seeks to re-narrate the almost 4,000 deaths which took place during the fraught period in contemporary Northern Ireland, called 'the troubles'. The dead, far from being gone, remain as a powerful part of the community. How we think about the dead, and the stories we tell about the relationship between the dead and the living, are central to imagining new forms of community and narratives of nationhood. An intimate, yet public, monument to those killed, *The Irish Linen Memorial* is created on white, linen handkerchiefs, with the names printed and overstitched with embroidery, and spotted with sewn hair.

As an adjunct to this counter-monument, I constructed a personal installation on the subject of 'mending', developed through a residency at The Gunnery studios in Woolloomooloo, Sydney. In addition to *The Irish Linen Memorial*, in 2002 and 2004, I invited fellow artists to dialogue with the work that, in turn, produced a dance-theatre performance and a seven-channel sonic-surround original music composition. As well, in 2005, new media components were a part of the installation. In all, this project comprises this exegesis, several gallery installations, a DVD that documents the artwork and a portfolio of images in a booklet.

The exegesis outlines the complexities of a hybrid memorial grounded equally in contemporary sculpture and textiles. I have outlined the historical context of the material culture of linen and presented a general overview of the socio-political landscape of contemporary Northern Ireland from a feminist postcolonial perspective.

My case studies center on how installation artists tackle socio-political issues of national concern. The thesis exegesis reflects upon the new theoretical positionings of feminist theory in relation to sculpture and textiles, text and textiles, feminist theories of the public and the private, the greater visibility of the migrant artist, in particular, the self-consciousness of the migrant artist in Australia, together with the increasing conflation of High/Low, Art/Craft arts practice into an elastic hybridity.

The case studies I examine to explore these themes are the work of USA artists Richard Serra (b. 1939) and Maya Lin (b. 1959); in particular Lin's *Vietnam Veteran's Memorial*, 1982, an anti-monument on a reconciliatory theme of national importance, and Serra's *Tilted Arc*, 1979 - 89, a courageous exposition of the working chiasmic power of a federal, pedestrian plaza. My other case studies are contemporary artists Narelle Jubelin (Australian, currently based in Spain, b. 1960) and Doris Salcedo (Colombian, educated in New York City, b. 1958), whose installation artwork is based in sculpture and textiles, and both of whom address touch as an important component of their work. Jubelin addresses national issues through the extreme juxtaposition of petit point needlework with large-scale architectonic forms. Salcedo works with art-as-a-witness, re-configuring furniture and clothing, leaving the viewer with the affect of the terror, grief and trauma of living with daily political violence.

The dimensions of this book are the size of the handkerchief used in the creative project. The side bar of the exegesis acts as a reminder of the central concern of my artwork from 2001 – 2005: honouring equally *all* those killed in the troubles, listed chronologically. Thus, the exegesis becomes another artwork: a site, displaced and conveniently mobile, as is *The Irish Linen Memorial* and the book upon which it is based, *Lost Lives: the stories of the men, women and children who died as a result of the troubles*, 2000. The exegesis seeks to pick, unpick and rethread a sense of the fragile, recuperative work involved in a community emerging from conflict, the place of my birth.

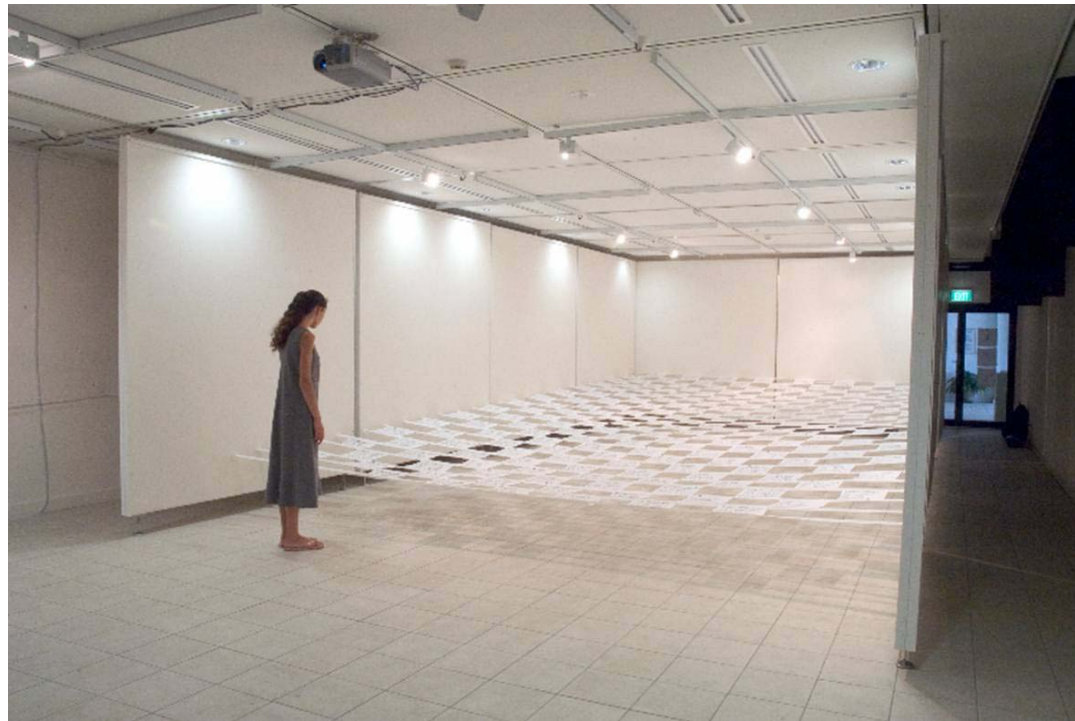


Figure 11: Solo thesis exhibition of *The Irish Memorial* 2005.
Faculty gallery, Faculty of Creative Arts, University of Wollongong, February, 2005.

Introduction

The Irish Linen Memorial (The ILM) is a site-contextual installation and counter-memorialⁱ, which commemorates over 3,600 persons who were killed during the sectarian violence in Northern Ireland during in the years 1966 – 2001. The names of those who died during this period, commonly known as ‘the troubles’, were chronologically recorded in the book *Lost Lives: The Stories of the Men, Women and Children Who Died as a Result of the Northern Ireland Troubles, (Lost Lives)* by David McKittrick, Seamus Kelters, Brian Feeney and Chris Thornton, an anti-monument itself. My creative project, *An Intimate Monument: The Irish Linen Memorial*, are dimensions of the contemporary history of Northern Ireland, mid-1960s to present. The names of those killed were printed on to several hundred white linen handkerchiefs. My specific focus is on the temporal-spatial concerns of a public ‘chismatic’ or ‘interface’ site, together with the intimacy or ‘affect’ produced by an embroidered and sewn artwork on linen. *An Intimate Monument: The Irish Linen Memorial*, is situated in the intersection between the grief and bitterness caused by sectarian divisiveness, and invites reflection upon new narratives of citizenship and plural ways to engage a ‘parity of esteem’ within sustainable community relations in contemporary Northern Ireland.

Background to my concept development of *The ILM*

It has taken me some years to acknowledge how the Northern Ireland troubles have partly determined my identity as an artist. *The ILM* has provided the vehicle for me to deal overtly with my Northern Irish (North Belfast) heritage and my interest in the intersection of politics and art. The memorial was conceived after my participation in an international sculpture exhibition in Belfast, Northern Ireland, in 1999, which was the first time I had returned as an adult to my place of birth. Upon my return to Canada, my adopted home since 1970, I read the book entitled *Lost Lives: The Stories of the Men, Women and Children Who Died as a Result of the Northern Ireland Troubles*, published for the millennium. I consider this memorial a contemporary counter-memory monument. *The Irish Linen Memorial* is a testament to the fact that grief is a universal human emotion, yet I am not naïve to the fact that certain deaths or trauma may be used for political gain in particular contexts.

The promotion of public art as an excuse to gentrify certain inner-city environments after poverty and violence is a strategic tactic used in recreation, urban planning and culture departments of local governments around the globe. *The ILM* is not meant to serve, unwittingly, as a promotional device for tourism which has

been an aspect of the new climate in Northern Ireland since 1994, as indicated in this passage from a book on the intersection of urban planning with public art:

In 1991 the Northern Ireland Tourist Board boasted its best year ever in terms of visitors to the province since the start of the troubles (Brien 1991), this sat uncomfortably with widespread press reports that a significant number of tourists were actually attracted by the abnormality of Northern Ireland's urban centres rather than the image of pastoral tranquility projected by the Tourist Board (Thornton 1991; Sharrock 1991; Moore 1991 qtd. in Neill 1995:69).

Children of 1970s Belfast emigrants to North American and Australia, such as me, are a part of this tourist board data in the 1990s. Having grown up at a distance from the troubles, we seemed to have needed to process the direct and indirect messages we received both from our parents and the media during the 1970s and 1980s. The violence was viewed/experienced safely in our living rooms across the globe; intercontinental telephone calls were still expensive, and email and 'immediate' internet or mobile phone text-messaging did not exist. The 1990s and new millennium was a time to reflect upon our place within a community we never knew but seemed to have lost, to understand both sides of a dialogue about violent differences and inequalities we knew, by right of birth, that we were meant to be positioned for or against, and to integrate this peculiar understanding with our new knowledge of having grown up in other places, among other races, religions and cultures. In my family these things took on a seriousness, which, when coupled with my artistic practice, drew me to conceive of this memorial in late 1999. Australia, with its history of extensive Irish migration, has been a fruitful and appropriate place to research my processes and techniques for this creative project.

The Creative Project

The Irish Linen Memorial is unique, in that it is in-process, and has been exhibited several times in different venues, from 2001 to 2005. Outlined in this exegesis are the objectives that underline the creative project, placing it in its socio-historic context, and addressing theories that assist in examining the work and analysing its objectives. The thesis is informed by the University of Wollongong *Fabric(ation)s of the Postcolonial* project, an Australian Research Council (ARC) large discovery grant upon which I worked as a research assistant from 2001 – 4. That project explored the interdisciplinary arena of literary textual analysis, including post colonialism and feminism, with material cultural analysis. Through my memorial-installation creative project, a text on linen that hangs in space, this thesis exegesis endeavours to explain my hybrid art practice, positioned between sculpture and textiles. My case study on the Australian artist, Narelle Jubelin (currently residing in Spain), specifically serves to explore that interdisciplinary arena. My practice is held in that elusive intersection between the public-political and objective, (historically designated as male Art and highly revered) and that which is intimate-domestic, corporeal and subjective, (historically positioned as female craft and typically dismissed or

erased). Theorists, such as Elizabeth Grosz and Anna Chave, have stimulated more ease and elasticity between notions of the public and the private, sculpture and textiles, diminishing the decrees of Clement Greenberg and the binary oppositions of High/Low art.

My graduate training was based in site-specific sculpture, and I examine site-conscious spatial concerns in my case studies of Richard Serra and Doris Salcedo. Also, I study the hybrid memorial work of architect-artist Maya Lin, whose public sculpture is educational and situated outside the gallery context.

In further case studies, my research focuses on needlework projects that have been used to draw attention to political issues in the public arena. It considers the history of women's activism and positions *The ILM* works as a feminist anti-violence project and is commemorative.

The ILM is a project that re-imagines post-conflict Northern Ireland (N.I) in the wake of mid-1990s peace talks, and draws upon the work of Northern Ireland theorists Elizabeth Porter, Paul Allan and Allen Feldman. Through this artwork-installation-memorial, I suggest new connections across the ethnic divide in Northern Ireland, proposing fresh narratives of peace and reconciliation across difference. Throughout this document are some autobiographical references. These are 'the private and ambiguous processes of memory' as might be stated by Australian historian Joy Damousi (2004). Such reflections are about my art practice, my Protestant Northern Irish heritage and the personal passages of migration in the multicultural milieus of Canada, 1970 – 84, the USA, 1984 – 2000, and, most recently, Australia, since 2001.

The materials for examination comprise of a DVD, a small picture booklet, and several versions of *The Irish Linen Memorial* in gallery contexts, including in 2005 at the Faculty Gallery, the University of Wollongong. The thesis exegesis graphic design format is itself a reflective commemorative narrative, which can be experienced simply through the turning of the pages, and thumbing the sidebar listing those thousands killed in Northern Ireland, from 1966-2001. The time code at the bottom of each column reflects the time it takes for the oration of the individual names, to recall and remember those persons who have been killed.

Together, *The ILM* and the accompanying personal artworks comprised of my '*Mending*' series, proffer a reconfiguration of the relationships within the living and the dead, and between the living and the dead, and are intended as a modest intervention in the project of (re)imagining a peaceful and just Northern Ireland.

The terms 'counter-monument' or 'anti-memorial' mean neither heroic nor static with officialdom's version of the events. James Young describes this as "the metamorphosis of the monument from the heroic, self aggrandizing figurative icons of the late nineteenth century celebrating national ideals and triumphs to the antiheroic, often ironic, and self-effacing conceptual installations that mark national ambivalence and uncertainty of the late twentieth-century postmodernism" (2000: 96).

Several theorists in the 1990s including Australians: artist Janet Laurence, Sue-Anne Ware (2003); others, such as Caroline Wiedmer and Andreas Huyssen, have discussed the implications of the anti-memorial or counter-monument.

Counter-memory involves questions about the following, for example:

"The political site of memory practices is still national, not post-national or global. This does have implications for interpretive works...one must always ask whether and how the trope enhances or hinders local memory practices and struggles, or whether and how it may perform both functions simultaneously." (Huyssen 2003:24).

"How should even local, regional, or national memories be secured, structured, and represented? Of course, this is a fundamentally a political question about the nature of the public sphere, about democracy and its future, about the changing shape of nationhood, citizenship and identity." (Huyssen *ibid.*; 35)

"Memory...can be no substitute for justice, and justice itself will inevitably be entangled in the unreliability of memory. But even where cultural memory practices lack explicit political focus, they do express a society's need for temporal anchoring when, in the wake of the information revolution and an ever increasing time-space compression, the relationship between the past, present and future is being transformed beyond recognition." (Huyssen *ibid.*; 37)

Australian public artist, Janet Laurence, (co-creator of the Australian war memorial in London, UK) in a lecture delivered at the Memorial Art and Architecture Seminar at the University of Queensland, August 2003, stated that the anti-memorial has a special corporeal function that engages the body and the viewer enters the space; that inscriptions should be engaged with slowly and that such memorials work against the structure of forgetfulness.

Caroline Wiedmer references the 'memoryscape' created by artists Renata Stih and Frieder Schnock in Berlin, 1993. This memorial to 6,000 lost German-Jews is a series of 80 double-sided signs attached to lamp posts in the neighbourhood of Bayerischer Viertel. The images or inscriptions on the posts were Nazi laws and decrees from 1933-45. Unlike a traditional monument, this one is 'plurally-sited' and asks the onlooker to take a more complex, active role than that of simply mourner/survivor. The active viewer-reader is provoked into assuming the guise of a possible collaborative-perpetrator in the intertextual narrative as it unfolds within a walking tour of the area's streets and it transforms temporal experience into spatial (Wiedmer 1999: 107 and 112-13).

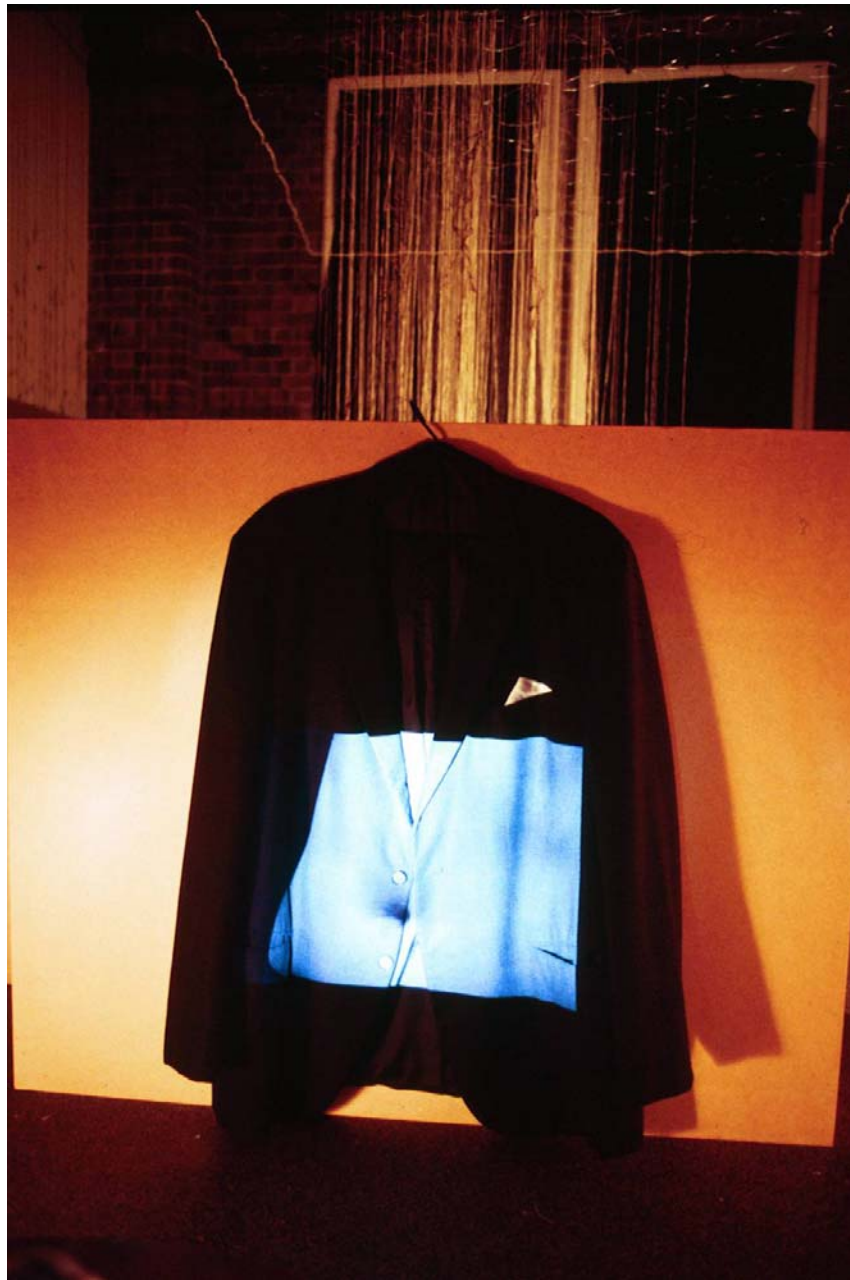


Figure 1: Installation: *Excavation of Being at Rest: Make Do and Mend*
Artspace-The Gunnery 2004

Chapter 1

My Creative Project: *The Irish Linen Memorial*

My Irish Linen Memorial (The ILM) is a feminist intervention, in an intimate medium, of 'a modest witness'¹ (Haraway 1997:45) to the Northern Irish 'troubles'. The 'troubles' is the period of thirty years of violent conflict in Northern Ireland (N.I) from the late-1960s to 2000. *The ILM* is an artistic contribution based on the book *Lost Lives: The Stories of the Men, Women and Children Who Died as a Result of the Northern Ireland troubles (Lost Lives)*. The artwork-memorial seeks to work against the tide of continued violence and terror in Northern Ireland. *The ILM* places all those who died as part of the contemporary, post-colonial nation of Northern Ireland², regardless of their origins, allegiances or affiliations. As such, my creative project is a quiet, national anti-memorial³, not a large-scale, permanent and aggrandizing monument. It is a counter-monument which serves to emphasize the banality and horror of each, individual death. *The ILM* serves to efface any inequality between deaths, re-working N.I's divided community in alternate ways.



Figure 13: Irish linen handkerchiefs:
'Ormo' Handkerchiefs – acknowledged to be amongst the best ...
advertisement by McBride & Williams Ltd. Ormeau Avenue Belfast.
Belfast an Industrial City Jonathan Bardon, Blackstaff Press Ltd., 1983. p. 223.

1966

John Patrick Scullion

Peter Ward

Matilda Gould

1967

Francis McCloskey

Samuel Devenney

Herbert Roy

1968

Patrick Rooney

Samuel McLarnon

Michael Lynch

John Gallagher

Hugh McCabe

Gerald McAuley

David Linton

James Dempsey

Jack Todd

William King

Victor Arbuckle

George Dickie

Herbert Hawe

Thomas McDowell

00:00:00

The ILM creative project outlined in this exegesis has been in process since 2001. It is a traveling memorial consisting of over four hundred white, diaphanous Irish linen handkerchiefs commemorating over 3,600 persons who were killed in Northern Ireland during the sectarian violence, more commonly referred to as ‘the troubles’. The names of persons killed are listed in chronological order of death – from 1966 to the millennium. The objective of this memorial is to acknowledge the cost of human life lost in sectarian violence and to contribute to the repatterning of community relationships through an artistic ritual of remembrance.



Figure 14: Detail of chain stitch embroidery with sewn ‘hairy spots’ and label, Irish Linen handkerchiefs of *The ILM*

David McKittrick, Seamus Kelters, Brian Feeney and Chris Thornton’s meticulously researched *Lost Lives*, underpins this creative work. In an “act of public service journalism,”⁴ the writers used public records to pinpoint the moment of death and catalogue factual information about those killed. *Lost Lives: The Stories of the Men, Women and Children Who Died as a Result of the Northern Ireland’s troubles*, from which I obtained the ordering of the names, is always displayed along with the memorial at each site, so that the viewer can find the particular story about a certain victim. This enormous tome documents each individual who was killed or died as a result of the troubles, together with a description of their moment of death⁵. Some of those mentioned in the book were neighbours and

Liam McParland

Patrick Corry

1970

Richard Fallon

Thomas McCool

Carol McCool

Bernadette McCool

Alexander Gould

William Kincaid

Daniel Loughlins

Robert Neil

Robert James

Joseph Coyle McCurrie

Henry McIlhone

John Thomas Reid

Williams Burns

Charles O’Neill

Zbigniew Uglik

Thomas Carlin

Patrick Elliman

Daniel O’Hagan

Samuel Donaldson

Robert Millar

David Murray

Michael Kane

00:01:36

friends of my parents; others were an intimate part of the lives of people I met in Belfast in 1999. Visitors to the memorial, since 2001, have related stories about those killed, stories which I have begun to archive. Others have left behind mementoes, gestures towards the hope for peace, healing and possible reconciliation. For some, the sorrow of visiting *The ILM* taps into grief from legacies of their own experiences, and helps explore ways towards the expression of a desire to end all violence.



Figure 15: Maki-san and Akemi Endo of Tokyo, Japan with their 300 origami paper cranes, called *senbazuru*, for peace, 2002.

The particular ordering of the names of the dead in *Lost Lives* is highly controversial and it is central to my memorial, which is non-hierarchical: perpetrators or terrorists are listed alongside victims; persons on either side of the sectarian divide are listed one after another according to time of their death. As an artist, I do not make any attempt at categorization according to people's religious or political affiliations. Without judgement, the different categories of the dead have been established, for reference, in the book, *Lost Lives*. My artwork, *The Irish Linen Memorial* extends the authors' research by presenting their

Liam Walsh

Peter Blake

Tom McGoldrick

Desmond Lagan

Arthur McKenna

Alexander McVicker

Andrew Jardin

1971

John Joseph Kavanagh

James Saunders

Bernard Watt

Robert Curtis

Albert Edward Bell

John Aiken

Harry Edgar

George Beck

William Thomas

Malcolm David Henson

John Lawrie

Cecil Patterson

Robert Buckley

William Jolliffe

William Halligan

Charles Hughes

John McCaig

00:03:12

unsensationalised facts in another medium – that of linen. My transposition of their research into textiles places a feminist emphasis upon the body and the private rituals of grief, mourning and healing, without losing sight of the divisive social-historical context within which those killings occurred. In so doing, this creative project explores conceptual themes governing the binary opposites of intimacy/politics, and suggests a movement beyond such divisions through an exploration of the excluded middle (Grosz 1989:xvi), so working to dissolve, undo or unpick, the binary difference. *The ILM* is an artwork based on new research at the intersection between grief and post-traumatic stress, drawing on contemporary memory studies. It is also informed by my personal artistic journey as a member of the Irish Diaspora to the countries of Britain, Canada, U.S.A., and Australia.

Throughout the creation of the memorial, I have imagined its eventual unveiling as a public art piece in an interface neighbourhood in Belfast or Omagh, Northern Ireland. In 2006 to 7, the memorial will be displayed at Glencree, one of two Centres for Peace and Reconciliation in Ireland, the other being Corrymeela, in Northern Ireland. Throughout this exegesis, I emphasise the methods by which the poetics of art traverses politics, and how new theories of kinship may provide a resource for sustaining community relations in places such as Northern Ireland.

The Irish Linen Memorial is a site-contextual artwork (see Weschler on Robert Irwin)⁶, which is permanent, but not sited permanently. The several hundred handkerchiefs which make up *The Irish Linen Memorial* are easily folded up, packed/re-packed for travel and reconfigured for installation. The hanging of the handkerchiefs in various configurations can be quite dramatic. First devised in 2000, the memorial has been mounted in three different countries so far, and exhibited in seven locations:

00:04:48

Joseph McCaig
 Dougal McCaughey
 Kenneth Easthaugh
 Tony Henderson
 Isabella McKeague
 William Reid
 Robert Bankier
 Michael G. Willets
 Martin O'Leary
 Seamus Cusack
 Desmond George Beattie
 David Walker
 Richard Barton
 Henry Cole
 Harry Thornton
 Malcolm Hatton
 Patrick McAdorey
 Leo McGuigan
 Sarah Worthington
 Hugh Mullan
 Frank Quinn
 Joan Brigid Connolly
 Noel Phillips
 Daniel Teggart
 William Atwell
 Francis McGuinness

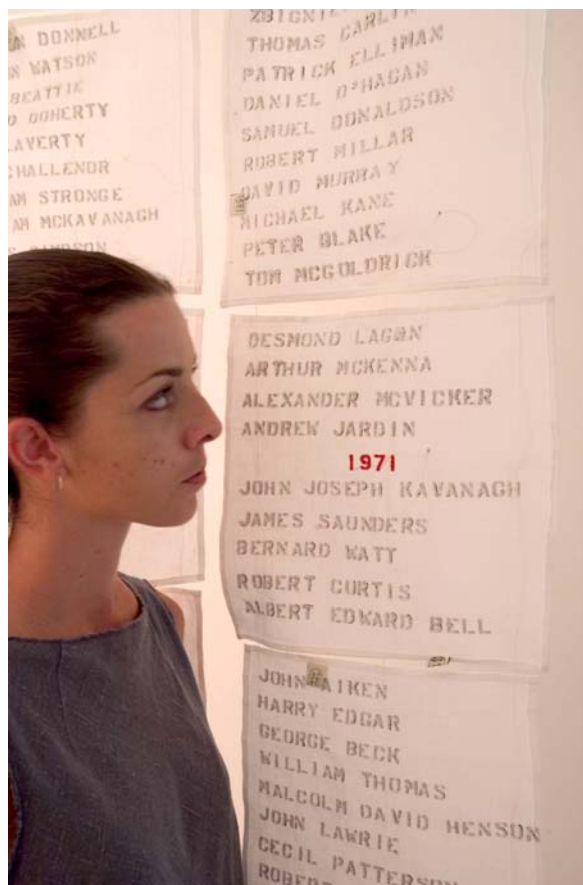


Figure 16: Embroidered handkerchiefs of *The ILM*
model: Bodie O'Dell; photo: Sean Maguire

1) The original artwork was conceived and developed in 2000-2001, with Canada Council funding, and was exhibited from September 7 to October 20, 2001 as part of the *Natural Causes* exhibit, in Ellensburg, near Seattle, Washington, USA, by curator Cheryl Hahn. The art work entitled, *Between Worlds: The Common Body* was part of a group exhibition on the theme of how identity or autobiography influences one's ecological/ environmental or landscape art practice. I created an installation 'room' where the drapery formed four walls of a memorial, beneath a blacked-out skylight in a foyer at the top of a flight of over twenty-five steep steps. In the centre of this room was a coffin-sized configuration of blocks of compressed peat moss (similar to Irish bog oak), upon which an image of a body was projected.

Desmond Healey

Hugh Herron

Winston Donnell

Norman Watson

John Beattie

Edward Doherty

John Laverty

Paul Challenor

William Stronge

William McKavanagh

Seamus Simpson

Paddy McCarthy

Alphonsus Cunningham

William Ferris

Eamonn Lafferty

Eamonn McDavitt

James C. O'Hagan

John McKerr

Joseph Murphy

John Robinson

George Crozier

Harry Beggs

Joseph Corr

Ian Armstrong

Clifford Loring

Francis W. Veitch

00:06:24

2) *The Irish Linen Memorial* was displayed in two Protestant Churches in British Columbia (B.C.), Canada: the Canadian Memorial Church and Centre for Peace and the Kerrisdale Presbyterian Church in Vancouver, B.C.; also in St. Matthew's Catholic Church in Portland, Oregon, USA. (see accompanying booklet)



00:08:00

Figure 17: Installation 'Horrific Hankies': *The Irish Linen Memorial* University of Wollongong, Cloisters Gallery, Faculty of Creative Arts. Nov. 1 – 11, 2002.
Photo: Sean Maguire.

3) In November 1 to 11, 2002, I hung *Horrific Hankies* which was the first phase of this inter-disciplinary performance-installation with fellow University of Wollongong creative arts colleagues. The exhibit *Horrific Hankies* was mounted in the de-centered space of a long academic corridor in the Creative Arts building at the University of Wollongong, called the Cloisters Gallery (Curator: Jelle Van Den Berg with assistant curator Natasha Younie). The memorial included a seven-channel sonic surround by fellow DCA candidate Thomas Fitzgerald, entitled *The Seeming Insanity of Forgiveness*. An opening night dance-theatre performance, entitled *Linking the Living with bandages of Linen and Lace*, was choreographed by Elizabeth Cameron Dalman.

Angela Gallagher

John Warnock

Annette McGavigan

David Stewardson

William McGreanery

Martin Leonard Carroll

Paul Carter

John Ronald Rudman

Peter Herrington

Samuel James Nelson

Robert Leslie

James Glenn Finlay

Gerald O'Hare

Rose Curry

Alexander Andrews

Earnest Bates

Peter Sharp

Terence McDermott

Patrick Daly

Brian Hall

Winifred Maxwell

Roger Wilkins

John Thompson

Cecil Cunningham

John Haslett

David Joseph Thompson



Figure 18: composer, Thomas Fitzgerald, with screenwriter, Rie Natalenko, Wollongong, 2003.

00:09:36

4) In December 2002 a small-scale artwork, titled *Distressingly Delicate Domestic Linens...Listening*, was included in the *Unfolding Territories* group show which accompanied *The Fabric(ation)s of the Postcolonial* conference, at the University of Wollongong.

5) In 2004, *The Irish Linen Memorial - Transformation of Tears*, was installed at Craft ACT (Australian Capital Territory) Gallery and Design Centre, during the Canberra National Multicultural Arts Festival, February. It was a memorial-installation with an accompanying sonic composition and a dance-theatre performance by three Mirramu Dance Company professionals (see booklet). The viewing of *The ILM* was enlivened at this exhibition in Canberra as many who came to see it identify themselves as part of the Irish Diaspora, including the recent wave of 1970s-80s Irish migrants from Northern Ireland.

Joseph Hill

Graham Cox

George Hamilton

John Bennett

Maura Meeham

Dorothy Maguire

Sean Ruddy

Thomas James McLaughlin

Robert Anderson

Martin Forsythe

Robert Patrick Lindsay

Robert George McFarland

Ronald Dodd

Peter Graham

Angus Stephens

David Tilbury

David Powell

Norman Booth

Michael McLarnon

Alfred Devlin

John Copeland

Ian B. Docherty

Thomas Malcolm Kells

Stanley Corry

William R. Russell

John Cochrane

6) During a residency at Artspace-The Gunnery in Woolloomooloo, Sydney, in 2004, I investigated a process indispensable to the human condition: the breath. Installation artwork was subsequently developed on the theme of 'Mending'. At my studio, the preliminary installation generated another piece entitled 'Excavation of Being at Rest: Make Do and Mend' (view in the moving image on the DVD, enclosed). My works, based in materialist sculpture⁷, explored ideas about memory and trauma surrounding *The Irish Linen Memorial*.



Figure 19: 3 oil pan and hair

7) The memorial was exhibited in the Faculty of Creative Arts, at the University of Wollongong in February, 2005. The public memorial, itself, is an intimate monument, where individual deaths have been subsumed into a larger whole – a quilt-like arrangement in space. A partner exhibit, entitled *The Mending Room*, was an

Molly Jane Gemmell

William Jordan

Stephen McGuire

Frank McKee

Christopher Quinn

Kathleen Thompson

Paul Genge

Ian Curtis

Dermot Hurley

Thomas J. W. Moore

W.E.L. Rena

Edwin Charnley

Michael Crosse

Brigid Carr

Colin J.L.Davies

Paul Nicholls

Jimmy O'Neill

Ian Hankin

Robert Malcolm Benner

Vivienne Gibney

Denis Wilson

Philomena McGurk

Maria McGurk

James Cromie

Edward Keenan

Sarah Keenan

00:11:12

accompanying intimate installation, held in a small adjacent room – a space that focused upon the individual pain of each death and the personal aspects of grief and healing.



Figure 20: Solo thesis exhibition: *The Irish Linen Memorial*
Faculty of Creative Arts Gallery, University of Wollongong. February 2005.
model: Bodie O'Dell; photo: Sean Maguire.

00:12:48

Therefore, *The ILM* is best understood as a reflection on the meaning of deaths from the troubles, as they recede in time and as hope emerges for ethnic and civil pluralism (see chapter two) through the fragile joint-authority government. Yet, after the election of Members of Parliament with extreme views, in November 2003 and May 2005. To date, there has been a lack of success in the efforts of conflict-management and ‘coercive consociation’ (see O’Leary and McGarry 1993:5), or a lasting resolve to sectarian divisiveness (see also Lijphart 1977 and 1991). In each incarnation of the work I seek to invite/provoke a somewhat different response of remembrance and mourning from the viewers.

Subtle variations on the theme of trauma, grief and new definitions of the possibilities of reconciliation are reflected in the different memorials, their context, location or accompanying performance, sound or new media elements. Each installation documents the evolution of a personal journey

John Colton

Thomas McLoughlin

David Milligan

James Smyth

Francis Bradley

Thomas Kane

Philip Gary

Kathleen Irvine

Edward Laurence Kane

Robert Charles Spotswood

Mary Isobel Thompson

Anthony Gerald Nolan

Jeremy Snow

Sean Russell

Kenneth Smyth

Daniel McCormick

Harold King

Tracey Munn

Colin Nicholl

Hugh Bruce

Joseph Parker

Jack Barnhill

Martin McShane

Anthony Aspinwall

James McCallum

John Bateson

towards a deeper understanding of the complex socio-political issues and/or the varying emotional reverberations of the troubles spanning from 1967, when I was born in west Belfast, N.I, through my formative years in Canada and the USA, into the present in an Australian context, apparently far from sectarian violence.

Linen was chosen as the medium to chronicle the names of those killed. Irish linen is also pivotal to an appreciation of the artwork in its material culture (see chapter three). Needlework stitched atop the printed names has been a long-term, crucial process for *The ILM* creative project and with connotations with to utilitarian needlework (as in repairing and mending⁸ see Reynolds 1999:327-37) and decorative embroidery. The white-on-white chain stitch embroidery and sewn hair⁹ contrasts with the larger, spatial considerations of each installation. The minutiae of the needlework require the viewer to pause and closely examine the dedication of each name, and reflect upon the pattern between the thousands of deaths. The creative aspects of touch, (exemplified by textiles hand-crafting and handkerchief units), visibility, (light passing through the linen), and the perceptual, (moving through space and time in an installation structure or enclosure), are co-existent parts of the complete memorial.



Figure 21: Kells Art Embroideries 1886
 ‘Working Bodies, Celtic Textiles and the Donegal Industrial Fund 1883-1890.’
 Janice Helland, *Textile: Journal of Cloth and Culture*, July 2004, Vol.2, Is.2,
 Berg, London. p. 143.

Martin Lee

James Joseph Sheridan

Margaret McCorry

John F. Lavery

Gerald McDade

Richard Ham

Jack McCabe

1972

Keith Bryan

Daniel O'Neill

Peter Gerald Woods

Michael Sloan

Raymond Denham

Maynard Crawford

Eamonn McCormick

Sydney Agnew

Charles Stentiford

Peter McNulty

Peter Gilgunn

David Montgomery

Raymond Carroll

Jack Duddy

Pat Doherty

Hugh Gilmore

Bernard McGuigan

In chapter three, I describe how the industrialization of linen production in Northern Ireland – on the periphery of Europe – forged links with the rest of the world, especially in the last part of the nineteenth century. Linen manufacture, a quintessentially British colonial development, thus resulted in disseminating positive (Northern) Irish identity traits, high culture, and economic development throughout the globe. In this artwork, quality white dress linen handkerchiefs of everyday use have been transformed into a medium expressing the affectiveness of sectarian violence - an accompanying tragic legacy of colonial progress into the twentieth century. The memorial invites viewers to think and feel the ways that textiles can be a repository of national identity and circulate with the Irish Diaspora. Textiles and cloth also underline how women’s utilitarian and/or decorative labour symbolically suture differences and offers hope of reconnection after trauma and displacement.

Key artists whose conceptual preoccupations underline particular aspects of my installation practice and construction of the memorial have informed this doctoral project. The case studies, each of which is the subject of one chapter, help to illuminate the underlying socio-historic developments and contemporary context of my art practice, as expressed in *The ILM*. The site-contextual exhibitions of the memorial also include elements that reference an autobiographical process or journey. If the memorial is didactic, then some accompanying installation elements work with ‘affect.’ Australian theorist Jill Bennett¹⁰, known for her research on art, politics and trauma, describes the exploration of “a certain *affective* quality of space ...to evoke modes of subjective experience: of loss, trauma or of a past that continues to haunt the present” (my italics 2005: 3).

My creative project development, as shown in the case studies, was influenced by the artists Narelle Jubelin (needlework, assemblage, postcolonial and memory studies), Richard Serra (chiasmatic space and materialism in sculpture), Maya Lin (hybrid memorials or counter-monuments and concrete poetry), and Doris Salcedo (Colombia, ‘juncture space’ and art as witness). My exegesis also discusses public needlework projects led by women artists from the 1970s to the present. Finally, I have

00:16:00

James Wray
Michael Kelly
William McKinney
Gerald McKinney
Kevin McElhinney
John Young
Gerald Damien Donaghy
William Nash
Michael McDaid
Robin Nigel Alers-Hankey
Ian Roy Bramley
Thomas McIlroy
Louis O’Neill
Phelim Grant
Charles McCann
David Seaman
Paul McFadden
Bernard James Rice
Patrick Casey
Joseph Cunningham
Ian Harris
David Champ
Thomas Francis McCann
Thomas Callaghan
Michael Fredrick Prime
Elizabeth English

included a brief synopsis of the influential work of Kathy Pendergrast (Northern Ireland, displacement and memory).



00:17:36

Figure 22: 'Transformation of Tears': *The Irish Linen Memorial Performance* by Mirramu Dance Company (see moving image on DVD) CraftACT Gallery 1, Canberra, Australian Capital Territory. February 2004.
Photo: Creative Imaging photography.

Descriptive Details

The Irish Linen Memorial is made up of manufactured handkerchiefs purchased on the internet with the aid of a Canada Council grant (2001), from The Irish Linen Company in Belfast. I made an aesthetic decision to print on the back, or underside, of the handkerchief in order to display the manufacturer's label¹¹. This tag, or brand name, then acts as a visual element on the seam of the hankies (protruding from one of the various sides) in the larger display configuration. When viewed from afar, this miniature green-bronze label creates an additional visual component in the white grid created by the configuration of handkerchiefs in the greater memorial. Making the label noticeable puts emphasis on the fact that those

David McAuley

Gerard Steele

Gerard Bell

Joseph Magee

Robert Dorrian

Gerry Weston

Jill Mansfield

Margaret Grant

Thelma Bosley

Cherie Munton

Joan Lunn

John Haslar

Gerard Doherty

Henry Dickson

Tommy Fletcher

John Maugham

Michael Patrick Connors

Thomas R. Morrow

Stephen Keating

Marcus McCausland

Ann Frances Owens

Janet Bereen

Albert Kavanagh

Eamonn Gamble

Joseph Jardine

Tony Lewis

killed on either side of the sectarian divide are unified through the Northern Irish troubles in death¹². The memorial enables the possibility of sharing grief, together with the hopeful proposition of potential reconciliation.

Details of technical processes and international collaboration

Each handkerchief bears the name of ten persons who died. The printing of the names was completed over many hours with the aid of a borrowed old-fashioned industrial punch letter machine (from ‘The Ideal Stencil Machine and Tape Company’, Belleville, Illinois, USA). The list of names was drawn up from the book *Lost Lives*, punched on to oil-boards and then inked on to the hankies, ten names per handkerchief. This process was completed from June to August 2001, in preparation for the first exhibit in Washington state.

Since mid-2003 my maternal aunt Margot Damon (née McGladdery)¹³ in London, England, joined in 2004 by my mother, living in Vancouver, British Columbia, Canada have hand embroidered the names. The technique is white chain stitch, in silk mercerized cotton, over-top of printed names in black ink. Therefore, the making of this memorial-artwork has been an international collaborative experience as packages of handkerchiefs are sent from one side of the globe to the other and back again. As well as being creative, this process has maintained my kinship relations, at a distance. One handkerchief per week is embroidered by each relative, with each name taking almost thirty minutes to complete and an entire hankie taking four to six hours. It will take several more years to complete the memorial in its entirety. The laborious, non-commodified handiwork process adds to the careful, considered naming of each person’s life, and aids in the commemorative process of those who have been killed in horrific circumstances. This meticulous process of embroidery illustrates a monumental undertaking of long hours devoted to precision hand-labour with precious linen. I made a decision that it is valuable to display the memorial whilst the embroidery is in-process, as well as when the needlework is eventually complete.

00:19:12

Sean Johnston

Gerard Crossan

Thomas McCann

Bernadette Hyndman

Patrick McCrory

Colm Keenan

Eugene McGillan

William Logan

Anthony Stephen Butcher

Christopher Robin Cracknel

Carmel Knox

James O’Hanlon

Ernest McAllister

Bernard O’Neill

Sydney Bell

Ernest Dougan

Samuel Trainor

James Macklin

John Taylor

Sean O’Riordan

Patrick Campbell

Ingram Beckett

Joseph Forsyth

Robert William Mitchell

Ruby Johnston

Martha Crawford

Interdisciplinary collaborative work with *The ILM* (see accompanying booklet, DVD)

The cross-disciplinary focus of the Faculty of Creative Arts at the University of Wollongong is one of its strengths. In 2002 and 2004, Australian colleagues were invited to work on *The ILM* installation. Music and dance, so important to traditional Irish culture, served to contextualize the linen references and gave a haunting tone to the memorial. This interdisciplinary work added an inter-cultural dimension and gave movement to the static quality of a printed list of names. For mainstream viewers, less familiar with avant-garde contemporary artwork, the familiar elements of music and voice¹⁴, together with the narrative of a dance-theatre piece allowed for a more ready engagement with traumatic and difficult subject matter.

Conclusion

In 1969, my parents decided to emigrate to Vancouver, B.C., Canada. When I came to Australia from North America, I was the same age my mother was when she left Belfast. My family was lucky to have physically and psychologically escaped the period of the troubles that deeply affected our country of origin. It took the lives of seven of our family friends, one of whom was only a boy of fourteen in the wrong place at the wrong time, Stephen Parker. My grandfather and uncle were almost killed at point blank range in their home, and a fire bomb ruined their house. My grandmother and great aunt were left traumatized, developing a dependence upon anxiety medication, routinely prescribed to women at the time. My mother had been sensitized to the troubles, stemming back to a childhood during World War II. Her father, Daniel Ritchie McGladdery, had been called up as a part of the Territorial Army in 1938 (before war started) and was away for the duration of the war. Like many returning soldiers, he became politicised and was keen to create a more democratic society as he saw it; eventually he became a senator in the Northern Ireland parliament, from 1958 until it was prorogued, 1972. In the 1970s and 80s my maternal grandparents, out of a sense of duty to their mixed

00:20:48

Bernard Calladene

Henry Millar

Peter Deacon Sime

Samuel Hughes

Charles McCrystal

John McErlean

Eric Blackburn

Brian Thomasson

Elizabeth McAuley

Joe McCann

Sean McConville

Martin Robinson

Geard Bristow

Nicholas Hull

Patrick Joseph Magee

Patrick Donaghy

James Elliot

Martin P. Owens

Gerald P. Donnelly

Francis Rowntree

Joseph Gold

Laurence Jubb

Rosaleen Gavin

David Curry

Victor Andrews

John Ballard

community, refused to leave it – even as the troubles encroached upon their neighbourhood in north Belfast. At the same time, in Canada, my mother felt close to the troubles because of ongoing international media publicity. Northern Ireland is “the most internally politically violent of the recognizably continuous liberal democracies during the period of 1948 – 77 (in absolute numbers killed and in the per capita death toll)” (O’Leary and McGarry 1993:13). It has taken me some years to acknowledge how the Northern Ireland troubles have determined, to some extent, my identity as an artist. *The ILM* has provided the vehicle for me to deal overtly with my Irish heritage and my interest in politics and art.



Figure 23: Irish necklace of leprechaun on toadstool and horseshoe with Connemarra marble; on linen handkerchief.
Gifts sent to me as a child in Canada from my maternal grandmother.

The scourge of ethnic violence and trauma continue to affect many parts of the globe. With the new ‘war of terror’ since ‘9/11’, Australia and the USA are not immune. This artwork-memorial, although with a focus on my own cultural heritage, attempts to address the importance of inter-cultural creative projects in the public realm.

Patrick Joseph McVeigh

Tommy McIlroy

Alan Buckley

Michael Magee

Robert McMullan

Gerald McCusker

John Starrs

John Albert Pedlow

Martha Campbell

Bernard Moane

Ronald Hurst

John H. Hillman

Harold Morris

Manus Deery

Henry William Gillespie

Adrian Barton

William James Best

Richard Oliver

William Francis Hughes

John Moran

Eustace Hanley

Andrew Brennan

Margaret Young

Gerard Duddy

James Teer

John Nugent

00:22:24

The ILM was originally conceived with the idealistic vision, that through the recognition of past tragedies, persons may find ways of living in peaceful co-existence in diverse communities, and attempt to solve problems other than by violent means. *The ILM* may express the wishes of many in the Irish Diaspora who are concerned with social justice in their original homeland of Northern Ireland/Ireland. The peace and reconciliation process has been underway since 1998. *The Irish Linen Memorial* engages a narrative memory process in the post-conflict period. My memorial was inspired by the tragic personal stories which constitute the book *Lost Lives*. It is an artistic contribution towards sustainable community-building (between neighbours and former enemies, perpetrators and victims, the living and the dead) in what is becoming hopefully a place where peaceful co-existence takes precedence to violence.



00:24:00

Figure 24: Victims of the Omagh Bombing printed in the newspaper Tyrone Constitution, Northern Ireland, on August 20, 1998.

Paper lent to me by Margaret Barman, formerly of Newtownsteward and Omagh, N.I, who migrated to Sydney, Australia in 1957 and returned 'home' only days after the bombing in 1998.

In 1998 there were the IRA and loyalist ceasefires and the Good Friday Agreement which included Ulster Unionists and Sinn Fein. The Omagh, County Tyrone, bombing in mixed (60-40 Catholic-Protestant) community at 3:08 p.m. Saturday, August 15th 1998, shocked the world. 29 persons were killed, one of the highest death tolls of the troubles, "possibly the worst single incident of the troubles" (McKittrick et al 1437).

- Geraldine McMahon
- Joseph Fitzsimmons
- Jackie McIlhone
- Martin Engelen
- Harry Crawford
- Edward McDonnell
- Mary Clarke
- Thomas Wardlow
- Leonard Gerard McAteer
- Joan Scott
- Michael Bruce
- Marcel J. Doglay
- Victor Husband
- Brian Robertson
- Gerald Murray
- George Lee
- Charles E. Coleman
- Sam Donegan
- Norman Campbell
- Edward Megahey
- Roy Staunton
- Jean Smith
- Marion Brown
- Hugh Sean Madden
- Joseph Campbell
- Norman McGrath

Endnotes

¹ Haraway's modest witness is the theorist who would acknowledge her location and partiality and think of her relation to the world as one of articulation rather than objective representation. Modest witnesses are those who attend to the stories produced about the world. There is no clear split for them between stories and facts. For these witnesses, 'Changing the stories, in both material and semiotic senses, is a modest intervention worth making' (45).

² There is debate within Irish Studies whether or not Ireland/Northern Ireland is 'post-colonial'.

³ The reference 'anti-memorial' refers to a 'counter-monument' that is neither heroic nor static with officialdom's version of the events. James Young describes this as "the metamorphosis of the monument from the heroic, self aggrandizing figurative icons of the late nineteenth century celebrating national ideals and triumphs to the antiheroic, often ironic, and self-effacing conceptual installations that mark national ambivalence and uncertainty of the late twentieth-century postmodernism" (2000: 96). Several theorists in the 1990s including Australians: artist Janet Laurence and Sue-Anne Ware (2003); others such as Caroline Wiedmer and Andreas Huyssen, have discussed the implications of the anti-memorial or counter-monument.

Counter-memory involves questions about the following, for example:

"The political site of memory practices is still national, not post-national or global. This does have implications for interpretive works...one must always ask whether and how the trope enhances or hinders local memory practices and struggles, or whether and how it may perform both functions simultaneously." (Huyssen 2003:24).

"How should even local, regional, or national memories be secured, structured, and represented? Of course, this is a fundamentally a political question about the nature of the public sphere, about democracy and its future, about the changing shape of nationhood, citizenship and identity." (Huyssen *ibid.*; 35)

William Raistrick

Alan John Giles

Charles Brendan Connor

John Johnston

Arthur McMillan

Colin Leslie

Ian Mark Mutch

Bryan Soden

Desmond Mackin

Kerry McCarthy

Patrick McCullough

David Moon

Christopher Stevenson

Stuart Reid

James Bonner

John Lunnen Brown

John Black

David Houston

James Meredith

Malcolm Banks

William Galloway

Bernard Norney

Toney Jordan

John James Finucane

Daniel Hayes

Paul Jobling

00:25:36

“Memory...can be no substitute for justice, and justice itself will inevitably be entangled in the unreliability of memory. But even where cultural memory practices lack explicit political focus, they do express a society’s need for temporal anchoring when, in the wake of the information revolution and an ever increasing time-space compression, the relationship between the past, present and future is being transformed beyond recognition.” (Huyssen *ibid.*; 37)

Australian public artist, Janet Laurence, (co-creator of the Australian war memorial in London, UK) in a lecture delivered at the Memorial Art and Architecture Seminar at the University of Queensland, August 2003, stated that the anti-memorial has a special corporeal function that engages the body and the viewer enters the space; that inscriptions should be engaged with slowly and that such memorials work against the structure of forgetfulness.

Caroline Wiedmer references the ‘memoryscape’ created by artists Renata Stih and Frieder Schnock in Berlin, 1993. This memorial to 6,000 lost German-Jews is a series of 80 double-sided signs attached to lamp posts in the neighbourhood of Bayerischer Viertel. The images or inscriptions on the posts were Nazi laws and decrees from 1933-45. Unlike a traditional monument, this one is ‘plurally-sited’ and asks the onlooker to take a more complex, active role than that of simply mourner/survivor. The active viewer-reader is provoked into assuming the guise of a possible collaborative-perpetrator in the intertextual narrative as it unfolds within a walking tour of the area’s streets and it transforms temporal experience into spatial (Wiedmer 1999: 107 and 112-13).

⁴ John O’Farrell in a statement upon the publication of the book, said, “A book of the dead, a book of resurrection. It is a crowning achievement for the authors, who have undertaken a massive task with little hope of recompense. This is public service journalism at its finest.” 2000.

⁵ The way persons met their death is noted but no comment on the rationale is stated, leaving readers to reach their own conclusions as to why a person was killed.

⁶ Robert Irwin, an artist from the west coast of the United States, is known for his installation work with light since the late 1960s-1970s, and subsequent

Hugh Clawson

David Fisher

Gerald McCrea

James Howell

John Patrick O’Hanlon

Denis Quinn

Malcolm Orr

Peter Orr

Samuel Robinson

Lawrence McKenna

David Andrews

Gerald David Turkington

James Joseph Fleming

Brian McMillan

Angelo Fionda

John Dougal

Margaret Gargan

Noel Fitzpatrick

Patrick Butler

David McCafferty

Terence Jones

Charles Watson

David McClenaghan

David Colin Poots

Charles Alan Meehan

Gerald T. M. Gibson

00:27:12

architecturally-based investigations into perception/space/presence/ the nature of vision; the peripheral quality of “both there and not there” (Weschler 113). I have been highly influenced by his work, along with the work of his one-time associate in 1968, James Turrell. Therefore, my reference to the term ‘site-contextual’ is meant to refer to the specifics of the legacy of their artwork. (Yet, in the 1990s, Miwon Kwon, contemporary architect and theorist, might, instead, term my work ‘site-conscious.’)

“For what Bob [Irwin] was trying to capture in these efforts was the incidental, the transitory, the peripheral – that aspect of our experience that is both there and not there, the object and not the object of our sensations, perceived but seldom attended to. These transparent phantoms disappeared into their environments, and yet, upon occasion, almost at the corner of our eye, there they seemed to shiver – a gleam”(Weschler 113).

“The [acrylic] column [Northridge Shopping Centre, outside Los Angeles, California, 1970] was an indication of my wanting to get out and treat the environment itself. I don’t mean in the sense of building buildings or being an architect, but rather of dealing with the quality of a particular space in terms of its weight, its temperature, its tactileness, its density, its feel – all those semi-intangible things that we don’t normally deal with”(Irwin qtd. in Weschler 114).

⁷ Materialism in sculpture is associated with the twentieth century removal of illusionistic space (“at the center of ...inert matter...was a source of energy which shaped it” eg. the work of Henry Moore) and the non-object oriented work of 1970s USA sculptors, Richard Serra, Carl Andre and Robert Morris. Materialism became associated with process art, and the finding of the form of a work through the procedures of its making -- allowing gravity to shape or complete the some phase of the sculpture (eg. the work of USA sculptor Eva Hesse). (Krauss 1977:253 and 272; Morris 1975: 65 and Morris 1993)

Materialism can also be understood through critic Douglas Crimp (known for his radical, political critiques of art in public space and art in relation to exhibition practices or economic and ideological contexts), upon writing about ‘rigging’ in

Paul Beattie
Jack McCabe
William Cochrane
Martin Rooney
Henry James Russell
Kenneth Charles Mogg
Thomas Burns
David Meeke
Hugh Wright
Robert Watkin
Williams Wynn
Kenneth Canham
Francis McKeown
Peter Heppenstall
James Reid
Terence Toolan
John Tegwin
Herbert Williams
Louis Scullion
Edward Brady
Jane McIntyre
John H. Young
Robert D. Laverty
Felix John Hughes
John Mooney
Tobias Molloy

00:28:48

the work of Richard Serra. He stated that the professional labor of others is used not only for the “manufacture of the sculpture’s material elements but also to “make” the sculpture...to put it in its condition or position for use, to constitute the material *as* sculpture” (his italics, 1986: 44).

⁸ In World War II, the British Board of Trade promoted a ‘Make do and Mend’ campaign. It encouraged the nation’s women in self-reliance and in contributing to the war effort through the recycling of household linen and family clothing or textiles. My mother and her sister, (who have been embroidering *The Irish Linen Memorial*), may have been influenced by the generally high profile of home sewing in accompaniment with the sentiment of ‘duty to one’s country’ espoused during their childhood as well as the campaign’s influence on the continuation of rationing in the post-war period in the UK when they were young women (see Woods, 1989 and Reynolds 1999). Rationing had the effect of equalising resources as every item of clothing had a coupon value regardless of quality or price (see Reynolds 328). Although my aunt’s skills and training in home economics and her enjoyment of embroidery is far greater than my mother’s, both my mother and my aunt have sewn the names (‘repairing’ the bold black printing on the handkerchiefs with the more elegant white handiwork of stitching) perhaps as a charitable duty of service as if symbolic of ‘mending’ for ‘their country’.



Figure 25: Poster designed by Donia Nachsen for the ‘Make-do and Mend’ campaign; no date; From The Imperial War Museum, ‘Your Clothes Are Materials of War’. Helen Reynolds, *The Culture of Sewing: Gender, Consumption and Home Dressmaking*, (ed. Barbara Burman). p. 335.

James Lee

Terence Graham

James Joseph Jones

Thomas Mills

Alan Jack

Leslie Leggett

Harold Gray

Anthony Davidson

Robert Gibson

William Kenneth Crothers

William Irvine

Thomas Killops

Stephen Cooper

Philip J. Price

Margaret O'Hare

Stephen Parker

Brigid Murray

Joseph Rosato

Joseph Downey

Patrick O'Neill

Rose McCartney

Francis Arthurs

Robert McComb

George Bunting

James Casey

Fredrick Maguire

00:30:24

⁹ The handkerchiefs are both sewn and embroidered; the embroidery is in white, chain stitch while the sewn “hairy spots” link the handkerchiefs in a haphazard, yet schematic way and further reflect Irish identity and the fragile need for connection with each other.

¹⁰ Bennett co-curated a 2005 exhibition in Sydney which included Northern Ireland artists Willie Doherty and Frances Hegarty entitled Prepossession.

¹¹ Saidie Patterson, a well-known Northern Irish textile labour activist and peaceworker recalls how linen flour sacks were frequently reconstituted into underwear and that having the brand name or trademark showing was a matter of ‘mortification’. My emphasis on the visibility of the trademark for the memorial seeks to reverse shameful connotations about the label “Irish/Irishness,” anti-Irish bigotry, or negative sentiment about the troubles being simply a ‘tribal’ Irish problem.



00:32:00

Figure 26: Kay Lawrence and various Indigenous artists. ‘Murray River’ exhibition, Adelaide, 2002.

Note: the pair of flour sack underwear, with the label showing.
Similar undergarments would have been made out of linen sacks in Ireland.

¹² “While the violence and fatalities of the Northern Ireland troubles have centred in that region, predominantly in Belfast, the troubles have included approximately

Brian Thomas

Arthur James Kenna

David Allan

Frank Corr

James McGerty

Francis McStravick

James Cassidy

Phillip Maguire

Daniel Dunn

William McAfee

Seamus Bradley

Daniel Hegarty

Elizabeth McElhinney

Joseph McClusky

Kathryn Eakin

David Miller

James McLelland

William Temple

Robert McCrudden

William James Clark

Rose McLaughlin

David N.Card

Terence Edward Hennebry

David Wynne

Errol Leroy Gordon

Geoffrey Knipe

200 deaths in Great Britain, the Republic of Ireland and elsewhere in Europe (from Gibraltar to western Germany)” (O’Leary and McGarry 1993:9).

¹³ My aunt, Margot Damon (née McGladdery), born 1937, grew up in Armagh and Belfast, Northern Ireland. As a young adult, she trained in Home Economics in Belfast, followed by a postgraduate year in Glasgow, Scotland with further training in Liverpool, England and an MA in London, approximately 1960s. She had a career as a lecturer and, then, as an inspector for schools and colleges with the Inner London Education Authority. From 1985 to approximately 2000, she lived in Southeast Asia, working part-time for the Curriculum Development Unit in Singapore. Margot Damon currently resides in London with her husband and her voluntary contribution to the artwork is most gratifying to me. See appendix for further information, such as her approach to the memorial process in her own words, reflections upon her father, (my grandfather), and the contribution she is making to those killed in the troubles who have passed on.

¹⁴ The dialogue with Australian artists added a new dimension and furthered the work. When I invited Thomas Fitzgerald to participate, I had conceived the music as a violin solo or a lament for the dead. Fitzgerald’s family had migrated to Victoria, Australia in the late nineteenth century, perhaps during the Great Irish Famine. Fitzgerald’s first love is the violin and he seems influenced by his maternal heritage from County Clare, Ireland. Once we began to collaborate, a broader version of the piece emerged and we agreed upon an inter-cultural interpretation with pre-recorded chants to the dead from around the world, including from Indigenous cultures, as well as different sorts of Irish music and spoken voice.



Figure 27: Violinist/composer Thomas Fitzgerald (centre), 2003, Lycia (left), theorist Marta Cabrera (back), Luz Hincapié (Colombia), Wollongong.

Henry Creighton

Patrick Joseph Connolly

James Jones

Colm Murtagh

Anne Parker

Michael Clarke

Frank Wynne

Thomas Madden

Arthur Hone

David Anthony Storrey

Brian Hope

Charles McNeill

Patrick McGoldrick

00:33:36

William Spence

Michael Boddy

Philip Anthony Faye

Ronald Rennie Layfield

Richard Jones

James Neill

James Lindsay

Frank Quinn

Patrick Joseph Murphy

Marshall Craig Lawrence

Michael Joseph Gillesse

Joseph Fegan

Oliver Plunkett Rowntree

For further information on the music composition by Thomas Anthony Fitzgerald see the appendix, enclosed CD, and Fitzgerald's University of Wollongong Doctorate of Creative Arts (DCA) thesis, 2005. Also see appendix on the contributions to the sound collage from my colleague, Geraldine Finegan, an Irish-American of Catholic background from Baltimore, USA, regarding Buddhist chants for the dead, 2001-2.

My collaboration with choreographer-dancer Elizabeth Cameron Dalman, OAM, has been thoroughly documented in the article enclosed in the appendix, a conversation-interview, published in Vol. XXVI, No. 2 of *Kunapipi: A Journal of Postcolonial Studies*, as well as in a radio interview with Sylvie Stern in Canberra, 2004 (see appendix).



Figure 28: embroidered handkerchiefs by Margot Damon
windows looking out onto civic plaza, *'Transformation of Tears': The Irish Linen Memorial* at CraftACT Gallery, Canberra, Australian Capital Territory. February
Photo: Creative Imaging photography, 2004.

00:35:12

Noel John Madden
Patrick Hughes
John McCann
James Fredrick Johnston
Alan P. Tingey
Arthur W. Whitelock
Ian Hunter Caie
James Edward Eames
Alfred Johnston
James Carlan
Martin F. Curran
John Michael Nulty
Patrick F. Kelly
Thomas John Boyd
Anthony Metcalfe
William Herbert Trotter
Ian Roderick Morrill
Ronald Anthony Rowe
Roy Christopher
David Griffiths
Patrick Vincent Devaney
Eamonn McMahon
Robert Cutting
Victor Smyth
Briget Breen
Samuel Waring Boyde

Chapter 2

Northern Ireland Context: A brief overview of the troubles, 1968 – 98: feminist (re)imaginings of political communities in Northern Ireland.

The absolute death-toll from internal political violence in Northern Ireland alone places the UK as the 41st most violent state in the list of 150 states covered in the *World Handbook of Political and Social Indicators*, and as the most violent continuously liberal democratic state in the world in the thirty years 1948 – 77 (O’Leary and McGarry 18).

From *The Politics of Antagonism*.

Ulster is British says one; Ulster is *Uladh*, an ancient province in Ireland, says the other. On one side of the march drain¹, you say potato. On the other side, I say potato. Such contradictions are part of being alive as a member of the human species (Heaney 2002: 54).

From *Finders Keepers: Selected Prose 1971 – 2001*

Seamus Heaney, Northern Ireland’s Poet Laureate, who grew up ‘undislodgeably in-between’ on the River Moyola, the border between Catholic, Nationalist Bellaghy side & Protestant, Loyalist Castledawson.

The words we have written may read like journalism, but readers will quickly become aware that between the lines lie much grief and tragedy. We hope readers will be affected, as we have been, by the powerful message they convey of what violence can do to individuals, and families and communities (David McKittrick et al 2000:13).

From

Lost Lives: the stories of the men, women and children who died as a result of the Northern Ireland troubles.

Robert Ritchie McKinney

Robert Johnston

William Moore

Duncan McPhee

Douglas Richmond

William A. McIntyre

Patrick Doyle

Robert James Warnock

Andrew McKebben

Martha Smylie

John Davies

Anne Murray

Sinclair Johnston

Michael Joseph Quigley

John Van Beck

Edmond Woolsey

Frank Bell

Thomas Albert Stoker

Joseph McComiskey

Thomas Bullock

Emily Bullock

William Matthews

Stewart Gardiner

Minnie Malcolmson

John Michael Barry

Paul McCartan

00:36:48

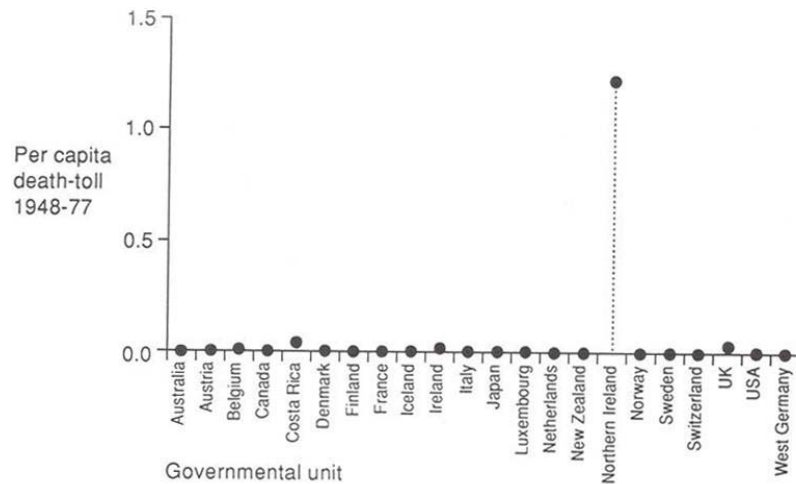


Figure 1.2 (b) The per capita death-toll from internal political violence in liberal democracies, 1948–77. Sources: Taylor and Jodice (1983: Table 2.7) and IIP (1990)

Figure 29: from *The Politics of Antagonism: Understanding Northern Ireland*. Brendan O’Leary and John McGarry, The Athlone Press, London. 1993, p. 15

Introduction

‘The troubles’ is a term that applies to the period of violent conflict spanning the late-1960s to the political promise of peace declared in The Belfast Agreement (also known as The Good Friday Agreement) signed April 10 1998². Since then, Northern Ireland (N.I), or Ulster (see glossary), has been emerging slowly from conflict and engaged in peace and reconciliation practices. This chapter outlines an explanation of the controversial non-hierarchical listing of the names, from different sides of the political divide, on the memorial. Thousands of years of settlement and division, North and South, have contributed to the current situation in Northern Ireland. The enormously complex background to the troubles and the recent moves toward conflict transformation are beyond the scope of this thesis. However, a synopsis from *A Concise History of Ireland*, by historians Maire and Conor Cruise O’Brien (1972) is provided in the appendix. Also in the appendix, to aid in understanding the troubles and the present-day sectarian divide, is an ‘Irish history since 1921’ by Aidan Moore, who gave the introduction to a presentation of my creative project in Canberra. There are thousands of publications on Northern Ireland that attempt to understand “The Ulster Problem”. Yet, as Sabine Wichert of

00:38:24

George Lockhart

Daniel Rooney

James Joseph Boyle

Daniel McErlean

Alexander Greer

Edward Pavis

Jimmy Quigley

Ian Stewart David Burt

Patricia McKay

Thomas Paisley

Michael Hayes

Francis Peter Lane

Thomas Rudman

John Kelly

Patrick McKee

Edward Stuart

Edward Patrick Bonner

Seamus Wright

Kevin McKee

James Patrick McCartan

Geoffrey Hamilton

Patrick Connolly

John Magee

Daniel McAreavey

Olive McConnell

Alex Moorehead

Queens University, Belfast states, it is only possible to move beyond the contemporary divide in N.I by assuming from the outset that every side is 'right' from their own perspective (1991:4).

This chapter focuses on the ways my understanding of the troubles has been shaped by new theoretical approaches offered by ethnography, feminism and cultural history, and how those insights have been visually expressed through my *ILM*. I write from the position of a migrant artist-researcher, born in Belfast in 1967, and living successively in Canada, the USA and Australia. My experience of the troubles was always at a distance, in rhetoric/information handed down to me from my mother³, or through the international news media during my formative years in the 1970s and 80s. The violent spectacle of the troubles in the media and family associations with Northern Ireland have strongly shaped my sense of my self, my artistic identity and place in the world.

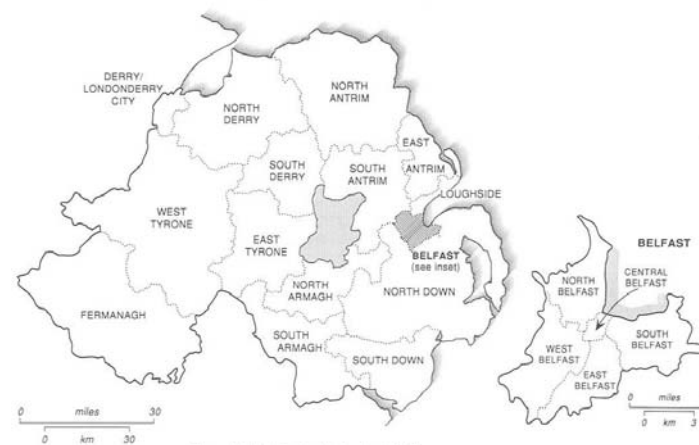


Figure 1.1 (a) Northern Ireland and Belfast

Figure 30: from *The Politics of Antagonism: Understanding Northern Ireland*. Brendan O'Leary and John McGarry, The Athlone Press, London. 1993, p. 9

Northern Ireland (N.I) Context

The colonial plantation of Ulster occurred in the seventeenth century. Since then, there has been a very difficult accommodation between the groups Scottish, English and Irish. Three ethnic communities, differing in language, dialect, political status and, of course, religion, constituted the territory of Northern Ireland: the Gaelic Irish, descendants from the Celts

John Ruddy

John Donaghy

Patrick Maguire

Joseph McKinney

Robert John McKenna

Robert Stuart Nicholl

Terence Maguire

Leo John Duffy

Thomas Marron

James Doherty

John Clarke

William Warnock

Hugh Henry Heron

John Patrick Mullen

Anthony P. David

Eleanor Cook

John Thomas Todd

James Arthur Gillen

Gordon Harron

Robin John Bell

Robert Mason

MichaelNaan

Andrew Murray

John Michael Morrell

Thomas McKay

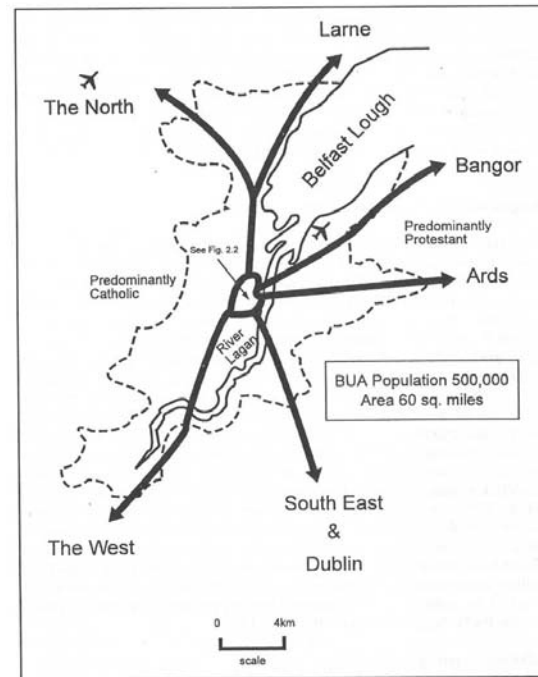
Michael Vincent Turner

and Roman Catholic by religious persuasion, migrant lowland Scots – Presbyterian in conviction and the Anglican ‘new-English’ planters, primarily noblemen (O’Leary and McGarry 1993:59-60). Only in the nineteenth century did the Presbyterians and Anglicans develop a more incorporated identity as ‘Irish Protestants’ with British affiliations⁴ (ibid., 62). In 1921, this island on the periphery of Europe, was partitioned into twenty-six counties called the Republic of Ireland, and six counties in the North that constituted Northern Ireland, which remained part of the United Kingdom. Northern Ireland contained a Unionist (Protestant) majority (see glossary), with a parliament at Stormont, Belfast, which maintained connections with Great Britain, until it was prorogued in 1972. The 1967-8 intercommunal civil rights⁵ riots brought the small province of Northern Ireland to the attention of the world. Since then, Northern Ireland is classified as second only to Lebanon in terms of internal violence within the European Union (Arthur 145). Almost 4,000 people have been killed and approximately ten times that number has been maimed in the Northern Ireland conflict since the late-1960s⁶. As a proportion of population, these casualties equate to over 500,000 lost in the U.S.A. – over ten times the number of American dead in Vietnam (O’Leary and McGarry 1993:12).

After the Good Friday Agreement in 1998, power was devolved to the Northern Ireland Assembly⁷, consisting of elected representatives from across the community, such as the Ulster Unionist Party and Sinn Féin. This body has held a fragile government in Stormont, Belfast. It is this transforming political climate - still fragile, controversial and tentative – which has provided the context for the writing of *Lost Lives*, and for my reconfiguration of the authors’ *Lost Lives* work in a textile-installation medium. *The ILM* imagines future civic comity and ‘consociation’ (O’Leary 2001:353-4) between the contemporary divisive communities in N.I, where nationalism/ethnicity/identity has long been coterminous with politics/culture/religion.

00:41:36

James Kerr
 Richard J. Sinclair
 Paula Stronge
 Clare Hughes
 Margaret Cunningham
 Irwin Long
 Joseph Henry Kelly
 Ronald Michael Kitchen
 John Joseph Gerard Kelly
 Joseph McCrystal
 Stanislaus Carberry
 Stanley Evans
 George Doherty
 Joseph Calvin
 William David Watson
 James Strothers
 William Clarke
 Joseph McIlroy
 Samuel Porter
 William John Chivers
 Rory Gormley
 Robert Keys
 John Columba Brady
 James Peter Carr
 Paul Jackson
 Gerard Gearon



Map 2.1 Belfast Urban Area

Figure 31: From 'Lipstick on the Gorilla?: Conflict Management, urban development and image making in Belfast,' William J.V. Neill in *Reimagining the Pariah City: Urban Development in Belfast and Detroit* (Ed.s William Neill, Diana Fitzsimons and Brendan Murphy), p. 59.

I consider *The ILM* a memorial or counter-monument, rather than an heroic shrine. It is the intimate intervention of a 'modest witness'⁸ (Haraway 1997:45) to the troubles, underpinned by plural visions of citizenship (Porter 36) and women's narratives of 'an ethics of care'⁹, which re-imagines the pattern of N.I.'s divided community in new ways. In listing the names of all those killed in the troubles, *The ILM* helps to imagine a future which recognises a 'parity of esteem'¹⁰ (Opsahl 1993), a reordering of relationships (Ruane and Todd) and legitimacy of difference in identities. In the controversial move of equally commemorating all those killed in the troubles, and momentarily suspending differences between perpetrators, intended victims and innocent bystanders, this counter-monument represents an artistic envisioning of the urgency of reconciliation. The landscape of linen and names is a paring back of the voluminous research of authors David McKittrick, Seamus Kelters, Brian Feeney and Chris Thornton (a detailed log of the individual circumstances

Joseph McAuley

George Bradshaw

Thomas Duffy

Patrick Liam Benstead

Sandra Mèli

Samuel James Hamilton

Bernard Samuel Fox

William J. Bell

Roy Hills

William Bogle

Samuel White

Ernest Elliott

Jean McConville

00:43:12

John Raymond Joesbury

Henry Stewart Middlemass

James Joseph Ward

James A. Nixon

Kathleen Dolan

James Joseph Reynolds

George Chambers

Frederick Greeves

Louis Leonard

Joseph Blaney

William Johnston

David McAleese

George E. Hamilton

of each death). By offering a visual web of the shocking and bleak equality of death, *The ILM* bears witness. This is done in an emotional register, by emphasising the names with needlework, a more insistent and immediate methodology than the careful manuscript documentation of *Lost Lives: the stories of the men, women and children who were killed in Northern Ireland's troubles*.



Photograph 7.1 Peace line: hard edge of sectarian division

214

00:44:48

Figure 32: From *Reimagining the Pariah City: Urban Development in Belfast and Detroit* Ed.s William Neill, Diana Fitzsimons and Brendan Murphy, p. 214.

Northern Ireland Contemporary Ethnography

New Northern Irish ethnography has attempted to identify the structural continuities and cultural reciprocities which mediate the ideological schisms between Nationalist/Republican ("Catholic") and Loyalist/Unionist ("Protestant") communities (McFarlane 1986 qtd. in Feldman 1991). In *Intolerance: The E-Coli of the Human Mind*, a series of lectures delivered at the Australian National University in 2004, Donald Akenson, a scholar of Irish and Australian colonial legacies, outlined the civil laws, religious codes, social claims, marital endogamy and educational segregation by which small 'filigrees' of Catholic-Protestant differences have been kept in place¹¹. Akenson stated that:

Irish Catholics and Irish Protestants – both in the Diaspora and in the homeland – have (a) for long moments in history believed

Alphonsus John McGeown

Charles B. Moore

Charles McCafferty

Bernard Kelly

Francis McCarron

Michael McGinley

James Mullan

Colin Harker

Eugene M. Devlin

Geraldine O'Reilly

Patrick Stanley

James McDaid

Hugh Martin

1973

Oliver Boyce

Briege Porter

Jack Mooney

James Hood

Trevor Rankin

Elizabeth McGregor

Henry Sandford

David W. Dorsett

Mervyn Samuel Wilson

David Williams Bingham

Arthur Francis Liggett

themselves quite separate species from each other, and (b) have done serious damage consequent upon their acting upon their beliefs (55).

Akenson’s earlier 1988 book entitled, *Small differences: Irish Catholics and Irish Protestants, an International Perspective*, documents the hundreds of fine threads of “casually meaningless” cultural differences in belief between the two groups (55). His work on intolerance attests to the power of those filigrees¹² and fine threads of difference in constituting ethnic groupings, which make envisioning reconciliation in N.I a fraught and difficult process.¹³ Akenson encourages reflection on the “conceptual congruities between modern nationalisms and ancient systems of sacred belief” while learning to “respect irreconcilable differences as well as to embrace comfortable commonalities” (1). “The Ulster colony became a major obstacle to the successful incorporation of Ireland into the emerging British nation” (ibid.; 62 and see Foster, 1988; Frame, 1990; Kearney, 1989).

The Construction of Violence and a Feminist Cartography of the Dead

In *Formations of Violence: The Narrative of the Body and Political Terror in Northern Ireland*, Allen Feldman¹⁴, offers an account of differences in N.I, which extends the threads of connectedness and divisiveness between ethnic groups beyond the living and into the realm of the dead. Feldman, an historian, has analysed the cultural construction of violence through both material culture and performative practice. He researched the oral histories, personal biographies, familial ledgers, and neighbourhood patterns of solidarity and political violence in Nationalist/Republican and Unionist/Loyalist communities in Belfast to understand “the symbolic forms, material practices and narrative strategies” of political agency (1991:1). In a chapter called ‘Genealogies of the Dead,’ Feldman employs the metaphor of cartography to think beyond a web of threads or filaments between the living, locating the “lineage of the dead” as equally bound into and tensioned against the “sociation of the living”:

The dead died in certain places and at certain times that form

Joseph Henry Weir
Margaret Ann Rowland
William J. Staunton
Peter Joseph Watterson
James Trainor
Francis Smith
Philip Rafferty
Gabriel S. Savage
Patrick Eugene Heenan
William Boardley
James Greer
Patrick Brady
Robert Burns
James Alfred Fusco
Samuel Reynolds
James Sloan
Tony Campbell
John Loughran
Brendan Maguire
Ambrose Hardy
James McCann
John Boyd
Seamus Gilmore
Michael John Murtagh
Andrew H. Petherbridge
Robert Alfred Bennett

00:46:24

conjunctures with institutions and events external and internal to the community. The genealogies are calendrical markers that anchor overarching events of historical magnitude in local temporalities and representations. The community marks itself with the cartography of dead events – the spaces of the dead. Local history, biography, and topography intertwine through the network of genealogy...The dead are placed at the origin of collective defilement and local history and in their narration continue to bear the burden of this qualification for the entire community.

The genealogy of the dead is a direct inversion of the positivities of kinship and residence, once the central units of the moral order of the inner city neighbourhood ...Social reproduction becomes organized around an absence: one's own dead and the dead of the other side...The lineage of the dead and the sociation of the living – exist side by side as mirror images of each other. The synchrony of the two social orders is a tensioned trope of the immanent inversion of the living by violence, past and present (1991: 65-66).

Like Feldman, I suggest that, in order to heal grief, trauma and anger, in the communities emerging from the troubles, alternative tropes and imaginings between the communities of the living and the dead must be proposed and woven into new, living community narratives. A production of new cartographies of dead events is integral to the possibility of a peaceful N.I based on a 'parity of esteem' between the two communities.

Schemes of knowledge and social practice centre upon rituals of the burial of the body, mourning, together with public and private responses to violent deaths. Politicalisation of the dead occurs through symbolic representation of active or passive victimology within the community. Lindsay Prior in *The Social Organisation of Death: Medical Discourse and Social Practices in Belfast*, 1989, states that narratives about sectarian divisions are continually affirmed and reaffirmed through the distribution of death and the social order/spatial segregation of the cemetery (121). Social relationships and collective beliefs distribute the geography of death and

Brian Douglas

Glenn Clarke

Hugh Connolly

Charles Morrison

Leo O'Hanlon

Vivienne Fitzsimmons

Edwin Paul Weston

Francis Taggart

Michael Coleman

Joseph McAleese

William Cooke

Malcolm Shaw

Robert Pearson

Thomas Douglas

Michael Doyle

Laurence Durber

William Gordon Gallagher

William Raymond Wylie

Alan Kennington

Kevin Heatley

Stephen Kerman

Daniel Patrick Bowen

Patrick Crossan

George Walmsley

David C. Deacon

Gary Barlow

00:48:00

the social morphology of the living into various structures and certain patterns (Zonabend; Warner; Young qtd. in Prior 1989:120). Therefore, my *ILM* uses the material culture of linen in (re)imaging the stories of individual deaths and the community of the dead. Linen's ancient, cross-cultural and sacred use in the rituals of burial may help imagine a re-ordering of identity-groupings in the living. A new cartography of the dead might emerge, bringing about subtly different connections and new meanings in social space(s). These, in turn, will challenge and provoke altered narratives of the living community and may help normalise an 'ethics of care' over legitimizing further violence and wreaking more trauma.



Figure 33: Kathy Prendergast, *Secret Kiss*, knitted wool, n/d, p. 173.
(The World May Be Fantastic): Sydney Biennale, curator Richard Grayson, 2002.

Nationalism

A crucial condition for movement towards the common good in political community is the forging of a principled space, which includes both the legal recognition of Irish nationalism and an honouring of the culture of 'Britishness' (see Opsahl 1993 in Pollack 1993: 113 qtd in Neill 64). In 1983,

Raymond Hall

Anton Charles Brown

Peter James McGerrigan

Frederick Milton

David Glennon

John Green

Joseph Leahy

Dennis Eccles

Alan Welsh

Edward Charles Sharpe

John William King

Larry McMahon

William Larmour Kenny

Michael Gay

Lindsay Jeffery Mooney

Robert Collins

Bernard McErlean

Richard Michael Muldoon

Barrington Joseph Foster

Thomas William Penrose

Ivor William Swain

John Huddleston

Ronald Macauley

Samuel Martin

Patrick McCabe

Andrew Somervell

00:49:36

Benedict Anderson proposed a definition of the nation as “an imagined political community,” with the citizen’s aspirations written into the narrative (15). Homi Bhabha built upon Anderson’s definition within post-colonial theory in 1990, describing a process of “narrating the nation,” where political communities are constituted through successive waves of stories, which place the audience within an imagined history. In the case of N.I, this requires an entirely new relationship to the notion of ‘nationalism’.

A reworking of the definition of nationalism, which precludes the ‘nationalism’ usually associated with the Irish Republican ‘Catholic’¹⁵ requires active and self-conscious struggle. The Republican or Nationalist position and, by proxy, the militant (male-dominated) mobilization of the Irish Republican Army (IRA), has long been invoked against ‘home rule’, the ‘union’ of Northern Ireland with Great Britain, and for the independent state of the Republic of Ireland. Yet, it should be noted that in contemporary Irish studies, unionism denotes another type of nationalism.

Feminism and Nationalism

According to Elizabeth Porter, there must be a ‘middle ground’¹⁶ between commonality and diversity where pluralism can exist, and new connections may be imagined and performed (Mouffe 1992: 14 qtd. in Porter 54). Porter illuminates:

While nationalism is a political identification, at its core lies a cultural claim, viz ‘that national movements are motivated by a desire to assume the existence and flourishing of a particular community, culture... tradition and language.’ The mindset of each community in Northern Ireland perpetuates cultural, political and religious differences... driven by clashes of different identities... For there to be any hope for peace and inclusivity in Northern Ireland, a plural acceptance of ‘identities of nationality’ is imperative (Tamir 1995:xiii and Geoghegan 1994 qtd. in Porter 1998:37).

00:51:12

Michael George Marr
David McQueen
Steven Norris Harrison
Terence Brown
Charles J. Marchant
Anthony John Hughes
Idwal Keith Evans
Edward O’Rawe
Joseph Adair
Robert Millen
Margaret Miller
Brendan Brian Smyth
Anthony J. McDowell
Mervyn John Connor
Anthony Goodfellow
Kerry John Venn
Graham Dennis Cox
Liam McDonald
Thomas Wayne Crump
William Ronald Vines
Terence Williams
John Gibbons
Franklin Caddoo
Anthony Ahern
Thomas Taylor
Kevin Kilpatrick

One of the lasting legacies of second wave feminism is a feminist analytics of power, historian Joan Scott declared. Contemporary feminism has offered an analysis of the operations of difference and the workings of power in diverse arenas, which extend beyond a narrowly conceived sexual difference. It has taught us to be wary of categories, which are presented as a-historic, with essential and immutable differences, and has made us sensitive to the varieties of powers that inhere in all social relations. (Scott 2002:3) Since the early 1980s, feminist writers such as Nira Yuval-Davis, Floya Anthias and Chandra Talpade Mohanty have specifically focussed on an analysis of women and ethnic/national distinctiveness in a variety of national contexts, offering strategies and discourses for the critical consideration of, and commitment to, horizontal alliances across divisive boundaries. Writing in 1998, utilizing the work of theorists Sarah Radcliffe and Sallie Westwood, as well as Alan Finlayson, sociologist Elizabeth Porter builds on their work by using discussing what she calls transformational feminism to outline the situation in N.I:

The way we define citizenship is linked intimately to the kind of society and political community we desire. A vision of citizenship that is viable in N. I. builds on an ethic of responsibility to fulfil common desires for justice, equality and socio-economic well-being and... to reflect the particularities of its multi-ethnic members (57).

In N.I., since 1998, a culture of tolerance has superseded a culture of the normalisation of violence (Arthur and Jeffery 1988:26 - 28), creating new opportunities for cross-community organisation in peace forums. Within such burgeoning new conditions, particular attention must be placed on the ideologically weighty construct of nationalism and women's¹⁷ place in the hope for social change. Nationalism can be progressive or reactionary, liberal or illiberal, racist or multi-cultural, democratic or undemocratic (Pettman 1996:62). Nationalism is an unstable category of contested identities in which women, if granted access to political power, can activate plural identities of inter alia ethnicity and nationality (Wilford 1998:16) and cultural pluralisms (Yuval-Davis 1994)¹⁸,

00:52:48

John McCormick
John Gaskell
Robert David Rutherford
Michael Joseph Leonard
Eileen Mackin
Thomas Ward
Joseph McKenna
Sean McKee
Barry Roy Cox
Arthur Place
Derek Reed
Sheridan Young
Robert McIntyre
Edward Coogan
Thomas Friel
John Ferguson Wallace
Ian Donald
Joseph Matthews
Paul Cromie
Margaret Hyrkiewicz
Thomas Holmes Curry
Gerard Barnes
Samuel McCleave
Sadie McComb
Alfred Acheson
Frederick William Drake

as well as cultures of resistance to previously male-defined imaginings to form post-nationalist definitions of citizenship (Geoghegan 1994).

Yuval-Davis and Anthias, outlined in 1989, that women are reproducers of the boundaries or distinctions of ethnic and national groupings, and are visible actors transmitting community values. Their definition is one of active participation as women are involved in the transition in societies emerging from divisive conflict. Under the duress of unequal access to political power and limited economic access to practical solutions, women are redefining and (re)imaging the meaning of nation-building or the construction of sustainable future community(ies).

The ILM as a feminist cultural project utilizing ‘soft’ power

The project of reconciliation is one played out in many registers. Cultural production is a contribution to re-imagining political communities. The arts and culture intervene in political situations using what is called cultural democracy (see Kurin 1997) and a strategy of what has been termed ‘soft’ power. Cultural projects with or about the victims of violence, such as *Lost Lives* or the radio-interview project in 1999, *The Legacy Project* (www.bbc.co.uk/northernireland/history/legacy/index/shtm), and *The ILM* can reach a wider public at certain crucial phases of the peace and reconciliation process. According to Arthur, who quotes Nordstrom, cultural memory projects use “soft power” outside the parameters of formal, conventional diplomacy (149).

It is important to me how this commemorative artwork is positioned and received. *The ILM* is not a nostalgic, romantic project offering a simplistic worldview; nor do I intend that white linen connote sexual purity. Nor is the project, sewn by the hands of women, meant to be aligned with a bourgeois respectability and nineteenth century notions of femininity. It is not my purpose to position women as passive and idealised guardians of a public and private moral order with which to uphold the immutability of the nation (see G. L. Mosse 1985 on nationalism and sexuality in Modern Europe). Finally, neither does *The ILM* project adhere to gender-divided imaginings about a horizontal/homosocial

Terence Herdman

David Purvis

Daniel O’Neill

Samuel A. Rush

Nan Davis

Francis Campbell

Dinah Mary Campbell

Elizabeth Craigmile

Elizabeth Palmer

Robert Scott

Anthony Mitchell

Michael Wilson

Daniel Rouse

James J. Kelly

Barry S. Griffen

David Smith

David Walker

Joseph Cunningham

Paddy Wilson

Irene Andrews

Sean Loughran

Dermot Crowley

Patrick Joseph Carty

Noor Baz Khan

Robert McGuinness

Robert Sean Armstrong

00:54:24

comradeship.

Societies-in-transition are concerned with the de-escalation of the normalization of violence through issues of temporal and emotional space, such as in the troubles 'culture' (see Arthur 143-145). Fortunately, the conditions for future tolerance in Northern Ireland -- for being able to reclaim one's human dignity, and for living with difference -- are beginning to exist (Foley qtd. in Arthur 151).

Brief Artist Case Study: Kathy Pendergrast and the Cartography of Loss



Figure 34: Kathy Pendergrast, *Land*, fabric, 1991.

The Arts Council Collection, The South Bank Centre, London 'Rethinking Mapping' *Writing Women and Space Colonial and Postcolonial Geographies*. (Ed.s Alison Blunt and Gillian Rose) Gilford Press, New York, 1994. p. 242.

Kathy Pendergrast (b. 1958) is a contemporary Irish artist known for her sensitive examination of the body, the land, and ideas of colonial/postcolonial mapping of urban space. Although this artist is from the south of Ireland and currently resides in London, England, Pendergrast's importance to my exegesis stems from a practice equally based in intimate, wearable textiles and large-scale sculptural installation work. For example, Pendergrast's canvas tent *Land*, 1991, and bronze sculpture, *Moving Mountain*, 1998, expressly illustrate how this artist asks

Reginald Benjamin Roberts

Robert Clarke

Patrick Bracken

Dorothy Lynn

Isaac Scott

Frederick Davis

Christopher Brady

Geoffrey Alan Breakwell

Owen Ruddy

Sydney Watt

Richard M. Jarman

Pauline Kane

Alphonsus Cunningham

Bryan Criddle

Paul Peter Linauer

Leonard Rossborough

James Farrell

Francis Joseph Mullen

Bernadette Mullen

Henry Cunningham

Patrick Anthony Duffy

Joseph Murphy

Joe Murphy

Norman Hutchinson

Seamus Harvey

Gerard McGlynn

00:56:00

questions which shift and reallocate Irish colonial equations between place/land ownership and political symbolism/personal identity (Nash 230). In a 1995 *Art in America* article on 'Art from the Edge: Irish artists on both sides of the border', Judith Higgins suggests Pendergrast is part of a group of women artists who investigate "public and political meaning [as] informed by bodily experience, personal narrative and intense empathy" (41).

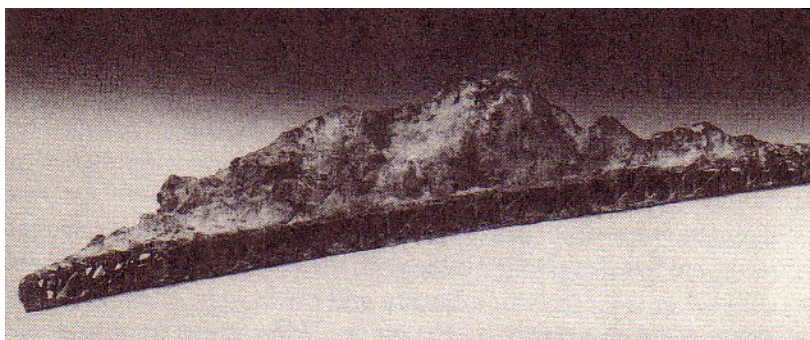


Figure 35: Kathy Pendergrast, *Moving Mountain*, bronze, 'Remapping the Body/Land' *Writing Women and Space Colonial and Postcolonial Geographies*. (Ed.s Alison Blunt and Gillian Rose) Gilford Press, New York, 1994. p. 243.

Pendergrast employs sketching techniques, textiles projects and sculptural work in bronze with equal conviction in the service of her conceptual concerns. She is "captivated by the use of time" and "the state of being lost" (Doherty 2002:174). In an essay on *Writing Women and Space: Colonial and Postcolonial Geographies*, Irish theorist Catherine Nash describes Pendergrast's sculpture in terms of body/land, gender/identity and the "poststructuralist feminist use of ideas of place that allow for multiple perspectives without undermining the strategic, if provisional, adoption of any one position" (1994:241). This position reiterates that of historian Joan Scott on 'reverberations of difference', and Elizabeth Porter on living with 'pluralities of nationalism in N.I', as outlined in this chapter.

Pendergrast produces eloquent visual referencing systems of the interconnection between the susceptible human body and the nervous system, reiterating new cartographies of loss, trauma or death. She juxtaposes urban planning images (the modern grid marked by aggressive

William John McIlveen
Edward Joseph Drummond
Patrick Joseph Quinn
Daniel McAnallen
William Trevor Holland
Charles O'Donnell
Charles J. McDonnell
Rita Meeke
Owen Devine
Sean McDonald
Ronald McDonald
Tony McGrady
Kenneth Hill
Ronald Francis Beckett
Francis Joseph Hall
Patrick Mulvenna
Anne Marie Pettigrew
Patrick J. Duffy
Matthew Lilley
Maurice Spence
Thomas Herron
Richard Miller
James Joseph Brown
James Bryson
Ronald Wilkinson
James Joseph Larkin

00:57:36

development and possible violence) with delicately intimate, organic web-like structures. This is evident in her historical metropolitan city-centre sketches, 1992 onwards, entitled *The End* and *The Beginning I and II*, and, simply, *Lost*. These are a series of delicately-articulated overviews of the urban plans of city capitals. Each image is 24 X 32 cm and is arranged in a grid formation to form a whole. The name of each city is listed under the sketches on white squares which “read like the inscription on a mausoleum,” (Ryan 6). Exhibited at the Art Gallery of New South Wales in The Sydney Biennale 2002, (*The World May Be*) *Fantastic*, the artwork is gently haunting, akin to archaeological sketches of lost abodes. Critic David Ryan considers Pendergrast’s imagery as “the linked mapping of a brain, or a photograph of loss somehow found captured – the revelation of a moment from the past, articulated in an elaborate scar” (Ryan 1).

Pendergrast’s use of textiles can be seen in her compelling creation of a knitted black head stocking built implicitly for two persons to commune or converse in a forced liaison. This is an example of textile art confidently conceived to carve out intimate spaces in the public arena. Pendergrast’s work is an absorbing re-designation about loss, displacement and death from trauma. Her post ‘9/11’ theoretical interests are about terror, remonstrations that now occupy many other artists globally.

Conclusion

My memorial art installation is a minor intervention into the complex and fraught field of political and social negotiation, an area also attempted by other contemporary Northern Irish artists, male and female. I intend my *ILM* to be a strong statement of feminist improvisation. The monument reiterates the absolute equality of death inserted into the contradictory medium of historically-feminised textile production. Placed in the public sphere, where feminist intervention has long been marginalised, *The ILM* contributes to a new wave of N.I stories since the mid-1990s. These narratives attempt to embrace, unravel and transform deep and unsettling societal wounds. My creative project designates ‘social representations’ as

Eileen Doherty

Ivor Vennard

Lindsay William H. Dobbie

Raymond McAdam

William Campbell

Ronald Edward Fletcher

Stephen Robert Hall

John Doherty

Patrick Campbell

Daniel Joseph Carson

Francis McNelis

John Aikman

Robert T. McCaffrey

00:59:12

Francis H. McCaughey

William John Wallace

Bernard Teggart

John Lundy

Kathleen Feeny

Michael McVerry

Charles Logan

David Roberts

Michael Marley

Francis Joseph Benson

Heinz Eric Pisarek

Joseph Ronald Brookes

Anthony Braden

having constitutive force, contributes to an endless political-cultural process, which produce different hegemonic meanings, makes for alternate connections in the social world, and creates re-visionary arrangements of identities. While I insert myself into the N.I socio-political arena with hesitation, my artwork nonetheless emerges from a lifetime preoccupied my neighbourhood of birth and my maternal grandparents' lifetime domain north Belfast. The district is a mixed economic, social and religious community and was much impacted by the sectarian violence. With the idealistic optimism of my multi-cultural Canadian upbringing, my *ILM* imagines alternate realignments of old enmities -- ethnic divisions that have so devastated sustainable community life in Northern Ireland for many years. In constructing this feminist project, I recall hidden pasts, the lived, the local and the everyday (Abramson 1999 qtd. in Damousi 2004:28). Through *Lost Lives*, together with the influence of my mother's family legacy, *The ILM* is an effort to compassionately re-imagine aspects of personal and collective identity. As an artist who works with the softer, empathetic art of memory studies/cultural history, I engage the subjective and the corporeal. At the same time I remain grounded in the rigorous training of a rational, site-contextual public artist as aligned with a 1960s notion of radical democracy and new ways of envisioning public space and plural modes of citizenship (see Serra 1989; Butler 2003). I invite readers-viewers to assemble/fabricate their own interpretations of a 'parity of esteem', as citizens of another Northern Ireland.

Endnotes

¹ Where 'one farm bordered the other'. Sometimes this was a hedge (Heaney 55).

² The Good Friday agreement was considered a watershed event in the transformation of divisive conflict and towards a more sustainable community in Northern Ireland. The authors of *Lost Lives* document those killed from 1966 to 2001.

³ My maternal grandfather, Daniel Ritchie McGladdery was a senator (including a Parliamentary Secretary/Deputy Leader of House) in the Northern Ireland parliament under Prime Ministers Brookeborough, O'Neill, Chichester-Clark, and

Desmond Morgan

Ivan Leslie Charlton

Cyril McCaul

Robert Megaw

Joseph Martin Walker

James Gibson

James Hesketh

Maurice Rolston

Jim McGinn

Ivan Acheson Johnston

Rodney George Fenton

Edward Grant

Brendan Quinn

Aubrey Harshaw

George Hyde

Alexander Howell

Michael Joseph Logue

Thomas Niedermayer

Alan Daughtery

1974

John Whyte

Leo Francis McCullagh

John Crawford

John Dunn

Cecilia Byrne

01:00:48

Faulkner. I like to think my grandfather, although a Unionist (linked to the British Conservative Party) and Orange order member, and, certainly, my mother (as a private citizen) were a part of the “growing professional and educated middle class [who] were becoming less concerned with the border and more concerned about the system of political, economic and social discrimination which had enforced their compliance for half a century” (Elliott 269). My mother’s political leanings were with The Alliance Party, associated with a type of middle ground. My grandparents were involved in community life in the mixed, lower middle-class North Belfast neighbourhood where they lived from 1945 until their deaths in 1981 (Daniel Ritchie McGladdery) and almost to the end of her life in 1984 (Eva McGladdery).

My father’s family were middle class Protestants who lived in Bangor, Co Down. My paternal grandfather’s leanings can be assumed by his signature (and blood) on ‘Ulster’s Solemn League and Covenant,’ 1912 (given to my father by his brother in 2003), see appendix. The Ulster Covenant was signed by over 470,000 people and it acted as a register of unionists over the age of sixteen, as well as an emotive demonstration of the strength of opposition to home rule (Hegarty 1089-90).

Some of my ancestors were Huguenots from France, most were from Scotland. Most of my father’s relations and colleagues either resided in the northern suburban stretch of Belfast, or migrated to Britain, Canada, New Zealand or Australia. Such people might fall more typically into the “silent watchers” camp which Elizabeth Porter outlines as “observing cautiously, keeping quiet in the attempt to not offend. This is the position many middle-class women (and men) take. Such persons enjoy a comfortable lifestyle, live in areas where an army presence, bombs, paramilitary community surveillance or police harassment, is rare. Therefore they do not have to confront the harsher realities to which those in working-class communities are subjected” (42). As such, my father never much discussed either his immediate family or the troubles when I was growing up. Until this thesis, I admit that I have tended to be a ‘silent watcher,’ socialised by my class and gender. Growing up in Vancouver, B.C., Canada, it was typical to let others assume that you were British and to omit, in ‘civilised conversation,’ that you were both Irish and/or had migrated from the ‘pariah’ city of Belfast, Northern Ireland. Ironically, it was not until my early twenties, through living in

01:02:24

Christopher Daly

Andrew Jordan

Robert Noel Jameson

Daniel Hughes

Desmond Mullen

Cormac McCabe

John Haughey

Howard Fawley

John Rodgers

Matilda Witherington

William Baggley Walker

Thomas Mervyn

Terence McCafferty

James McCloskey

Vincent Charles Clarke

Hugh Duffy

Anthony O’Connor

Thomas Donaghy

Peter Carty

Kirk Watters

Alan Brammah

Margaret McErlean

Patrick Molloy

Jack Wylie

Hugh Thomas Devlin

Christine Cardy

Detroit (from January 1989 until December 1991) and attending art school in one of its suburbs, that I began to reflect upon ethnicity, politics and urban planning of Belfast, where I was born. While studying in Wollongong, the book by William Neill et al. *Reimagining the Pariah City: Urban Development in Belfast and Detroit*, 1995, was very helpful about just such a comparison. As a young artist, my observation of the 'racial apartheid' of inner city (working poor) Detroit and its wealthy suburbs, Birmingham/Bloomfield Hills, USA, was an illuminating experience.

⁴ There was a common allegiance across the social spectrum of northern landowners, industrialists, commercial and professional middle class, and industrial working class around Belfast which took precedence over class 'loyalty' in Northern Ireland politics. (Porter 45)

⁵ The Northern Ireland Civil Rights Association was founded in 1967 and began demonstrating in 1968.

⁶ "Over 33,000 have suffered serious injuries since 1968, a figure close to one fifth of the population. The social impact of such violence is easily imagined. Although the data include knee-capping injuries they do not include the mental injuries suffered by those who have been kidnapped, those held hostage in their homes during 'stake-outs', those arrested when guilt of no crime, or those maltreated by authorities; nor do they measure the distress caused by being the friend or relative of a victim of the conflict or being a witness to violent deaths, injuries, and other intimidating episodes." (O'Leary and McGarry 1993:40).

⁷ It was called the New Northern Ireland Assembly to distinguish it from the Northern Ireland Assembly for which legislative provision remained at that time under the Northern Ireland Constitution Act 1973.

⁸ Haraway's modest witness (see Chapter 1) is the theorist who would acknowledge her location and partiality and think of her relation to the world as one of articulation rather than objective representation. "Modest witnesses are those who attend to the stories produced about the world. There is no clear split for them between stories and facts. For these witnesses, "Changing the stories, in both material and semiotic senses, is a modest intervention worth making" (45).

⁹ as distinct from 'essentialism' (see Porter 56-7).

Patrick Lynch

Gary Reid

Hugh McKenzie Harvey

Thomas Ian McClinton

Robert Thomas Moffett

Michael McCreesh

George Keatings

Billy Fox

David Albert Farrington

Michael Gallagher

Adam Johnston

Kevin Murray

Patrick McDonald

Noel McCartan

Philip Douglas James

Roy A. Bedford

Cyril John Wilson

Michael Joseph Ryan

Frederick Robinson

Michael Francis Herbert

Michael J. Cotton

Gerard McCarthy

Donald Farrell

John Hamilton

Joseph John Hughes

James Macklin

01:04:00

¹⁰ Torkel Opsahl, human rights lawyer, stated in 1993 that parity of esteem should be more than an ideal; the legal recognition of Irish nationalism and a recognition of the culture of ‘Britishness’ for unionists.

¹¹ For information on a quantitative historical/sociological analysis on the Weber-Tawney-McClelland grid methodologies see Akenson’s book, *Small Differences: Irish Catholics and Irish Protestants, 1815-1921: An International Perspective* (1988).

¹² Held in place by “self-segregating social mechanisms and self-segregating cultural belief systems”: denominational marital endogamy and segregation of the young in education. He warns that blaming segregation on colonialism is too simplistic (Akenson 55).

¹³ See appendix: letter from Brian Feeny upon my embarking upon this project,’01.

¹⁴ A historian of “genetic history of the symbolic forms, material practices and narrative strategies through which certain types of political agency are constructed in Northern Ireland” (1). The Northern Ireland situation has been informative in regards to the wider problems of political agency in late modernity.

¹⁵ It may be more accurate to state ‘from a perceived Catholic background’.

¹⁶ Here Porter distinguishes between the weak middle ground of The Alliance Party politics in Northern Ireland, which she states conceals unspoken privilege, and her strong middle position that respects diversity, difference, and yet seeks common ground.

¹⁷ In 2003, theorist Claire Connolly sums up “Recent developments in Irish women’s history, in the social sciences and in folklore studies testify to a feminist move to (re)occupy the territory of Irishness, opposing versions of nationality that rely on femininity to form its metaphorical ground. This tension testifies to an ongoing struggle between women’s material lives and cultural understandings of women as metaphor” (4).

¹⁸ In the 1990s, these theorists worked with conflicted groups of ethnic minority women, such as the Croatians/Serbians and Palestinian/Israeli-Jewish women.

James Mitchell

Joseph Donnelly

William Thompson

Howard Mercer

Sean McAstocker

James Andrew Hanna

Paul Anthony Reid

Clifford Houghton

Linda Houghton

Lee Houghton

Robert Houghton

Leonard Godden

Terence Griffen

Michael Waugh

Leslie Walsh

John Hines

Ellen McDowell

Stephen Whalley

Daniel Burke

John Stevenson

George Walter Saunderson

David Harold Sinnamon

Norman McKenzie

George Robinson

Anthony S. Pollen

William McDonald

01:05:36

Chapter 3

Material Culture Context: Irish Linen, a cultural history of a memorial fabric



Figure 36: *'Transformation of Tears': The Irish Linen Memorial CraftACT Gallery 1, Canberra, February 2004, Photo: Creative Imaging photography.*

01:07:12

Linen, an iconic Northern Ireland material, is central to this memorialisation of all persons killed in the troubles. This chapter explores the historic and cultural associations of linen in Northern Ireland (N.I) and is divided into two sections: the first provides a brief account of the properties of linen and flax, together with the methods of flax farming and linen manufacture in Northern Ireland. It suggests how linen has emerged as a universal sign for the founding of N.I. The second part reviews the poetic characteristics of linen. It considers the ways linen holds memories associated with the maternal home and linen's cultural connotations with

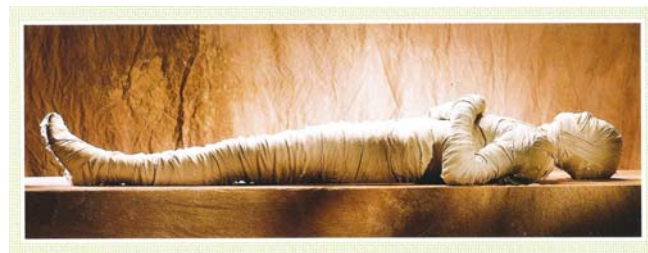


Figure 37: Egyptian mummy: European Community Publication booklet *European Linen, Masters of Linen*; Paris France.

Ronald Joseph Neill

Thomas George McCall

Seamus O'Neill

James Corbett

James Murphy

Mohammed Abdul Khalid

Thomas Morrisey

James Doherty

Thomas Ferguson

John Gallagher

William Joseph Kelly

Eva Martin

Albert Green

Patrick Jago

Frederick Leonard

James Desmond Devlin

Gertrude Devlin

Francis Rowe

Malcolm J. Ross

Brian Edmund Bell

Francis Brennan

Eugene Owen James

Martin

Sean McKearney

Colman Parnell Rowntree

Martin McAlinden

death. Irish linen served many purposes: intimate, private and domestic; symbolic public-political and ceremonial; as well as material for war. Pure, white linen was a prized dress and ecclesiastical fabric; other linens were used for bandages for the wounded, flags, sheets and handkerchiefs; and coarse, watertight linens were used in vehicles of war. The economic importance and extensive uses of Irish linen have made it a fabric loaded with symbolic associations.



Figure 38: Flax flower emblem for the Northern Ireland Assembly.

01:08:48

On 2nd December, 1999, power was devolved to the Northern Ireland Assembly and its Executive Committee of Ministers. The Northern Ireland Assembly passed a motion on 24th October, 2000, to apply for admission to the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association (CPA). Elections to the Northern Ireland Assembly were held on 26 November 2003. The Assembly is currently suspended (Jan 2005).



Figure 39: William Ewart & Son, Ltd. Advertisement for all the principal markets of the world ... 2 million yards of linen a month 1814 -1937, *Belfast: An Industrial City*, Jonathan Bardon, Blackstaff Press Ltd., 1983. p. 222.

Maureen Moore

Breda Turner

Antonio Magliocco

Anna Massey

Edward O'Neill

Marie Phelan

Anne Byrne

Colette O'Doherty

Christina O'Loughlin

Maureen Shields

Anne Marren

Marie Butler

Simone Chetrit

John Dargle

Patrick Fay

Breda Bernadette Grace

Mary McKenna

Dorothy Morris

John O'Brien

Anna O'Brien

Jacqueline O'Brien

Anne Marie O'Brien

Siobhan Rice

John Walsh

Elizabeth Fitzgerald

Josephine Bradley

Material trade and raw politics are behind textile metaphors, which define and support central items and values of culture (Sharrad 2000:2). Linen may be located as a socio-cultural/political sign or metaphor for the Northern Ireland context. In a *New Literatures Review* journal, *(un)fabric/ating empire*, Sharrad states that cloth, an object that circulates within and helps produce culture, provides a way of re-examining social, historical and economic conditions alongside, and over and apart from, literary texts (2000:1-2).

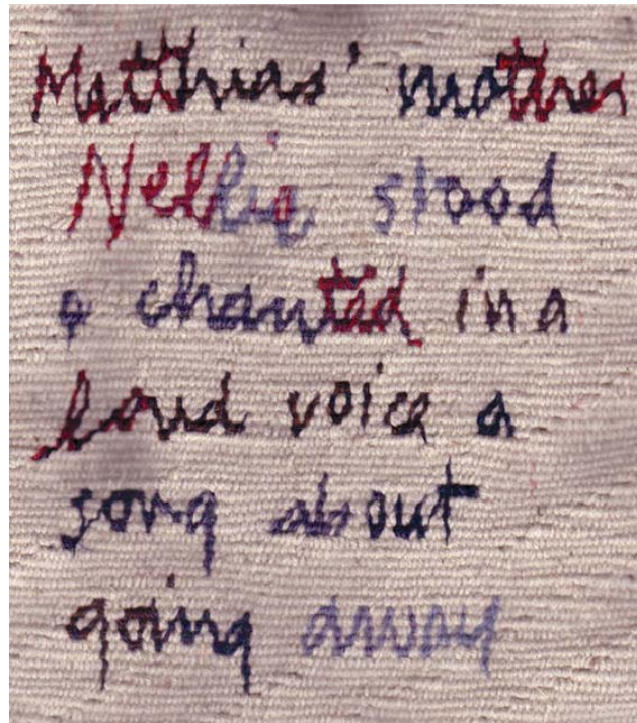


Figure 40: Diana Wood Conroy, Woven Tapestry, wool and silk weft on linen warp, 22.5 x 29.5cm ,2002

In 'Threading Words Together', Dorothy Jones, theorist of textiles and needlework, suggests various metaphors in the social semiotics of cloth, such as the delicate networks which constitute a well-functioning society:

Cloth, with its immense semiotic potential, belongs in both the material and metaphysical realms, gathering a wide array of associations – literary, mythic, social and political. Ancient and

Jack Travers

Peggy White

Thomas Campbell

Paddy Askin

George Williamson

Joseph Shaw

Archie Harper

Michael Joseph Mallon

Sean Byrne

Brendan Byrne

Alfred Stilges

Patrick McGirr

Eileen Bernadette McCrory

01:10:24

Alfred Shotter

Paul Tinnelly

John McLaughlin

Michael Gaughan

Frederick Stephen Dicks

Michelle Osborne

Concepta Dempsey

Peter Meighan

John Patrick Cunningham

Geraldine Corrigan

John Harrison Forsythe

Stanley Lemon

Daniel Joseph O'Connor

continuing analogies with language make it a ready metaphor of literary expression. 'Text' and 'textile' both derive from the Latin, 'texere' to weave. We spin a yarn, weave a story, follow the thread of narrative and fabricate or even embroider a tale. With the most up-to-date technology we communicate on the internet and the worldwide web while metaphors 'seamless' and 'unpick' have been incorporated into contemporary critical technology...

Ideals of womanhood and femininity are themselves fabrications to which textiles in their various forms have contributed both materially and imaginatively.

Whilst figuring importantly in national economics and trade exchanges, cloth also operates as a powerful symbol of social cohesion by evoking ideas of connectedness and tying (2000: 3-4).

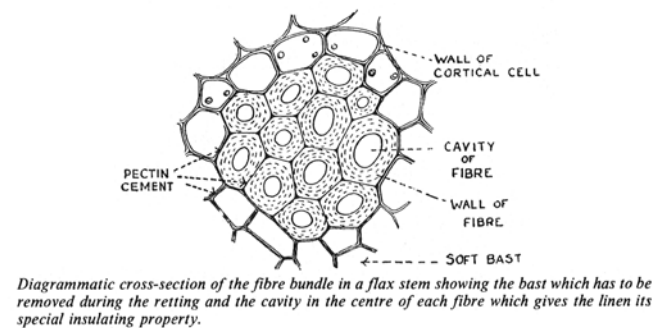


Figure 41: Detail, cross section of the flax stem,
Linen on the Green, Wallace Clark, University Press Belfast Ltd., 1983. p.93.

Attending to the progressive industrialisation of (Northern) Ireland, through linen, forces the consideration of linen as a 'sign' of positive Irish identity traits; attributes which also circulated celebratory positive character traits, features for which Irish quality linen was prized. Those aspects are linen's durability, reliability or absorbancy /watertightness; 'purity' regarding the bleaching process as well as a smooth, fine finish in delicate dress or ecclesiastic linens. *The Irish Linen*

Kim MacCunn

Hugh Devine

Gerard Majella Craig

David McKinlay

John Walton

David Arthur Smith

James Vaughan

Daniel James Elmore

Michael Bernard Browne

John Beattie

Thomas Braniff

Dorothy Household

Daniel Harkin

Brian Shaw

John Conley

Patrick Kelly

Ann Ogilby

Thomas Croarkin

John W. Murdock

Bernard Fearn

Charles McKnight

Martin Skillen

Martha Lavery

Patrick A. McElhone

Terence Miskimmon

Michael John

01:12:00

Memorial engages the imaginative textile connotations of civilised behaviour, links to the mother/land, caring for the wounded, and shrouding the dead. In this way, the material and methods of *The ILM*'s construction serve to bind metaphorically the divisive politics of sectarianism, stifle wounds and engage consanguinity between persons in 'post-colonial' Northern Ireland, as well as, perhaps, encouraging a type of 'surrender' of embedded anger about the troubles and those killed.

Linen and Flax in Northern Ireland

William Clark, in 1982, in the introduction to an account of his family's linen business (the firm of William Clark and sons, established 1730) in Upperlands, Northern Ireland, claimed that linen was:

The aristocrat of textiles. Strong as steel, delicate as silk...preferred by people of good taste for well over 4,000 years (x).

Throughout a history of sectarian strife in Ireland/Northern Ireland between Presbyterians, Anglican ascendancy and Catholics, linen and its accompanying farming, weaving and technical engineering accomplishments have been a part of the livelihood, landscape and quality of life for the Irish, at home and abroad. Throughout the political upheavals from 1641 to those of 1969, linen has contributed to the commercial prosperity and positive image of Northern Ireland, and both Protestants and Catholics share a pride in fine linen fabric from Ulster. The linen industry was promoted by migrants to Northern Ireland and went through cycles of boom and decline to find itself, along with the Irish Diaspora, situated elsewhere. In 2005, fine dress linen companies bear any number of Irish/Northern Irish associated trademark names, such as The Ulster Linen Company, physically situated in upstate New York in the U.S.A! Yet, memories of Northern Ireland as the biggest manufacturing centre of linen in the world during the industrial revolution remain. Flax is the only natural fibre still produced in the whole of Europe, giving it standing with a new breed of consumers sensitive to ecological interests or concerned with allergies (Collins 35).

01:13:36

Dennis Alfred Leach

Paul Magorrian

Joseph McGuinness

Peter A. Flanagan

William Hutchinson

Philip Victor Drake

Patrick McKeown

William Elliot

Mary H. Bingham

Arthur Rafferty

Martin McBirney

Rory Conaghan

Frances Cooke

Michael McCourt

Patrick McGreevy

William McCully

Kieran McIlroy

Gerard Martin McWilliams

Ralph Laverty

John Cameron

Robert James Willis

Eugene McQuaid

Asha Chopra

Caroline Jean Slater

Ann Ray Hamilton

William Forsyth

The ancient Irish wore saffron linen and the Brehon Laws (see glossary) which governed the country required farmers (Brughuids) to learn the cultivation of flax (Charley 1862:1). William Charley, a juror and reporter of the Great Exhibition of 1851 stated that the first record of Irish linen occurred in the thirteenth century. The term 'linen' was from the Latin botanical name for flax, *linaceae* or the old Irish/Celtic name, *lhin*. Quaker weavers, referred to as settlers, colonists or planters, who came to Ireland from the north of England, encouraged flax planting and the weaving of 'bundle' linen¹. From the early 1700s to the mid-nineteenth century, one third of the flax required for the colonies of the United Kingdom, and in South America, where Britain traded, was grown in Ireland (Lough 84). The linen industry brought prosperity and economic stability (for Protestant and Catholic workers) to the whole of Northern Ireland, from the late 1700s to the mid twentieth century, replacing the woollen trade in Ireland, which, by the seventeenth century, had declined because of acts passed by the British Parliament prohibiting the export of wool (Charley 1862:1-2). Thereafter, the manufacture of Irish linen, although in competition with the French and Flemish, was endorsed by Britain². Import duties were lifted for export to the British colonies (Crawford 1783; Bardon 1996:97). Linen in Ulster arose as a domestic industry where families combined flax farming with the making of yarn and cloth (Bardon 98). Conrad Gill stated in his 1925 account of *The Rise of the Irish Linen Industry*:

Women in Ireland, as in other countries, were almost universally trained to spin in either wool or linen, and gradually during the eighteenth century they learnt the use of spinning wheels. The first census returns made in Ireland described a very large proportion of the women as spinners (38).

In the first decade of the eighteenth century, the Irish Parliament established the linen trade hall in Ulster, followed by a Board of Trustees to encourage invention, set standards, training and extend the manufacture and export (Charley 1862:2; Bardon 1996:97).

01:15:12

John Hunter

Paul Craig

Arthur Henderson

Albert Greer Lutton

James Hasty

Michael Edward McKenzie

Kieran Gerard Murphy

Michael James M. Hughes

Edward Eric Morgan

Michael Loughran

Samuel Malcolm Gibson

Dominic Donnelly

Michael Simpson

Anthony Duffy

Alan Coughlan

Michael Swannick

Gordon Catherwood

Michael Gerald Meenan

Lorenzo Rodney Sinclair

Ivan Clayton

Hugh Coney

Brian Allen

Stephen Windsor

Vernon Rose

John Charles Simpson

Richard Dunne



Figure 42: Workers at their births in a scutch mill where the atmosphere was thick with dust. *Flax to fabric, the Story of Irish Linen*, Brenda Collins, An Irish Linen Centre & Lisburn Museum Publication, 1994.p.15.

01:16:48

Farming flax is the first step in the development of scutching³ and spinning to final woven linen goods. Flax prefers the long light of the northern parts of Europe to grow effectively, between the 49th and 53rd degree latitude (Schneider 200). It was grown in areas where the water table is high (Dempsey 1975: 7 – 10), pulled, not cut, in place, dried out for two to three days, then 'steeped or retted,'⁴ hand-gathered from the retting ponds, 'laid out in a meadow to be "grassed"' for three weeks to a month for fermentation (Schneider 201). Flax was broken and scutched, which was done mechanically, since the late 1900s and by hand, in small-scale family operations. Then the fibres are 'hackled' or 'heckled'⁵ before spinning. The whiteness⁶ of linen, as well as fineness of weave, determined the quality of the linen. Historically, the linen bleaching procedures were dependent upon the atmosphere and climate:

Alan Horsley

Gerard Fennell

Paul Edward Armstrong

Patrick Vincent Courtney

William Tierney

John McQuitty

Hugh Joseph Slater

Leonard Winston Cross

Joseph Taylor

William Joseph Elliott

Michael Brennan

James Patrick McDade

Anthony Simmons

Thomas John McCready

John Smyth Bailey

Robert William Forde

Kevin Patrick Regan

Patrick Aidan Falls

William James Burns

Michael William Beasley

Lynn Bennett

Stanley Bodman

James Caddick

Paul Davies

Jane Davies

Charles Harper Grey



Figure 43: Removing Flax from Lint Hole, County Antrim, *Cloth and Human Experience*, Ed.s Weiner & Schneider, Smithsonian Institution Press, London, 1989. p. 194.

Ireland possesses the best climate in the world for linen bleaching, and it is this local advantage - this gift of nature - that has gradually given to her, and secures to her still, so high a position in this branch of commercial industry...The bleaching of linen was perhaps one of the healthiest employments in the world, and the men involved often reach a great age" (Charley 1862:105).



Figure 44: A weaver at a damask power loom. *Flax to fabric, the Story of Irish Linen*, Brenda Collins, An Irish Linen Centre & Lisburn Museum Publication 1994. p. 29.

Maxine Hambleton

Ann Hayes

John Jones

Neil Marsh

Marilyn Nash

Pamela Palmer

Desmond Reilly

Eugene Reilly

Maureen Roberts

John Rowlands

Trevor Thrupp

Stephen Whalley

Geraldine Macklin

Michael Hanratty

Thomas Robert Gunn

Heather Thompson

John Thomas McClean

Mary Sheppard

William Clyde Hutton

James Murdoch

Patrick Cherry

John Ramsay

Thomas Trevor Hamilton

Thomas Chaytor

John Maddocks

James Davidson

01:18:24

In 1699 Protestant Huguenots fled religious persecution in France and settled in Lisburn, bringing with them their expertise and skill in the linen trade (Charley 1862:2). In his research, Wallace Clark stated that French Huguenots supplied the weaving expertise, and Dutch Huguenot migrants, introduced the finer aspects of the important bleaching processes (19).



Figure 45: “Eighteenth century Beetling Engine” brochure, Irish Linen Centre & Lisburn Museum, Northern Ireland tourist Board, 1996.

Until about 1760, when the bleaching chemical vitriol replaced sour buttermilk (or previously, a combination of wood, bone or pot ash, seaweed and fermented bran or lye or, even, cow dung) the bleaching process could take up to seven months⁷ and several acres for rinsing (by rivers and tributaries), beating and drying (Collins 18; Schneider 202). Finally, chlorine bleach replaced vitriol by the turn of the eighteenth century. The areas the cloth was laid out in long strips to air for long periods⁸ were called ‘Bleaching Greens’, common in historic photograph collections of the Ulster landscape. The “high price of linen, as compared with cotton, was attributable to the bleaching expense” (Charley 1862:103). Clark gives a memorable description of the bleaching process, 1720s-60s:

Ethel Jean Lynch

John Raymond McDaid

James Craig

David James McNeice

John Mallon

George Arthur

Joseph McDermott

Brian Fox

Ellen Maxwell

Emma Patterson

Anthony Morgan

Michael Edward Gibson

Maurice Thomas Knowles

01:20:00

1975

John Francis Green

Patrick J. Toner

Kevin Coen

John Stone

John Kelly

Thomas F. Lea

Edward Wilson

Robert McCullough

George Coulter

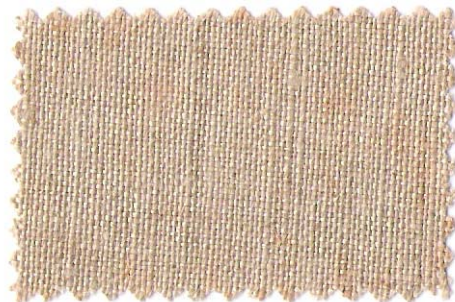
Colette Brown

William Robson

A field might be set aside for bleaching as today one would allocate a few acres to grazing or silage. Farm labour and carts were needed to cut and dry the huge quantities of turf used for boiling the cloth. Manure and sour milk were needed for processing, so every bleacher needed a dairy farm. There was plenty of weaving carried on by the cottars in the district, the bleaching process being carried out by the weavers' wives. The traditional method was to 'bowk' or 'boil the cloth in cow dung for an alkali, then sour or neutralize it with buttermilk. The cloth had to be subjected to this several times, between weeks spread out on the grass to be whitened by the atmosphere. After this, to close the yarns together and produce a smooth surface, it was a woman's job to stand in the river and beat the cloth against stones with a wooden club called a beetle⁹. Any piece of flat ground could do for a bleach green provided it could be intersected with trenches from which water could be thrown onto the cloth with a long-handled wooden scoop (Clark 10).

Anglo-Irish inventors harnessed water power for linen processing, also described by Clark:

Ireland is blessed, more than most countries, with rivers of a fall [ratio] of about one in thirty, and width around thirty feet; of a flow which a private individual could dam, ideal for waterwheels. There were plenty of men to harness them, so linen could be bleached and beetled there to a higher standard and at a fraction of the cost of anywhere else in Europe (19).



James Sullivan

Gerard Kiely

Kevin Ballentine

Joseph Fitzpatrick

Eugene Doyle

Arthur Mulholland

Samuel Christopher Mein

James Breen

Hugh Ferguson

Gerald McKeown

Robert John Thompson

Brendan Doherty

David McConkey

Chris John Fox

Michael Convery

Wesley Black

Stephen Tibble

Thomas Truesdale

Eamon Molloy

Edward Clayton

Michael Adamson

Joseph Desmond Clarke

Raymond Carrothers

Marie Doyle

Robert Skillen

John Fulton

01:21:36

Arthur Penn

Half the annual output of Irish brown linens and nearly all of the finest linens were produced within the 'linen triangle'.

In Britain, Lancashire cotton, a larger-scale production system, competed with Belfast cotton and linen during the Industrial Revolution (Gill 1). By the end of the Industrial Revolution, with the inventions of the

60

cotton spinning frame, jenny and mule (1769 – 79), the British saw fit to develop the cotton industry, in Ulster. The importation of raw cotton from the tropical colonies was more cost-effective, allowing European soils to be left for food staples (Slicher van Bath 1963). In 1811, 50,000 persons in greater Belfast had been re-employed in cotton mills or home hand-loom weaving (Collins 20). New inventions from the cotton industry were translated to linen, resulting in a 1780s flax spinning process, only applicable to ‘coarse linen yarn’, the type used for canvas (Collins 20 - 21). In 1805 the linen board offered incentives for the invention of machinery for spinning flax into sail cloth, (as shipbuilding was fast becoming the other staple industry in Belfast) (Bardon 1982: 128). Belfast manufacturers increased profit through the invention of the wet-spinning of flax which was perfected, in Leeds, in 1825 (Bardon 1982:70):

The valuable experience gained in making cotton was to be used to make Belfast the greatest centre for linen production in the world later in the century (Bardon *ibid.*:).

The American Civil War and the devastation of the cotton-growing states starved Lancashire production mills, (Bardon 1982:117), and helped resurrect Belfast’s linen industry. Specialist engineering firms, such as Preston, Blackburn and Bury, developed power looms to work with fine linen. With its lack of elasticity, (Bardon 1996:145; 1982:117), linen became the closest substitute for cotton, supplying the British market in a boom that lasted from 1862 - 1865. In 1865, Ulster exported most of the 255 million yards of linen from the United Kingdom (Bardon 1996:146), and continued to dominate the world market through to 1870 (Bardon 1982:117). W.H. Crawford describes the “far-reaching consequences” of the domestic linen industry, including its impact on the political economy and, eventually, in relations between Protestants and Catholics.

01:24:48

Elizabeth Carson

Agnes McAnoy

Mary McAleavey

Marie Bennett

Robert Kennedy

Stafford Meredith Mateer

Marion Teresa Bowen

Seamus Eugene McKenna

Michael Oliver McKenna

Michael Mulligan

Owen Boyle

Samuel William Johnston

John Feeney

Joseph Toman

Brendan O’Hara

Billy McMillen

George Brown

Samuel Grieson

Alexander Millar

Paul Gray

Francis Anthony Rice

George Potsworth

Gerard Alphonsus De’ath

John McErlean

Thomas McErlean

Noel Davies

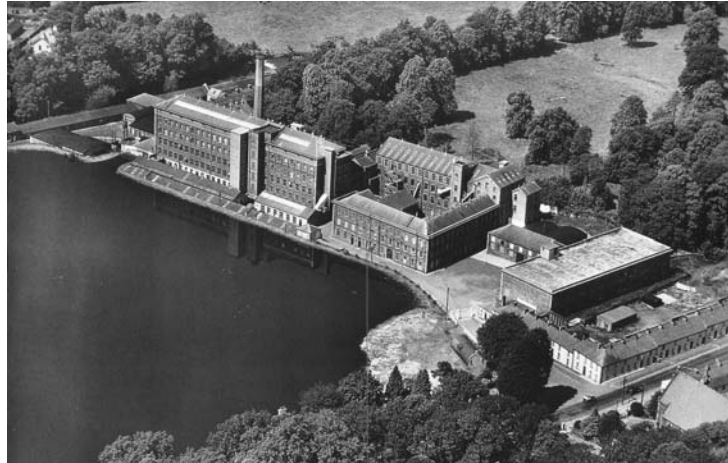


Figure 47: Gilford Mill, Co. Down, N. Ireland.
from a 1999 brochure for its re-development as a shopping mall and arts centre,
Gilford Creative Arts, Peter R Matson, Director.

In eighteenth-century Ulster the pace of change had been very rapid. The domestic linen industry had swept through the province dividing and subdividing the townlands into a myriad of small farms, while cultivation had advanced settlements along the mountain valleys. The new farms were served by thousands of miles of new roads that linked a complex network of market towns and villages and imported the products of the new industrial culture. Urban life with its esteem for education and commercial progress, introduced politics, organisation and administration that served as hallmarks of nineteenth-century Ulster society (Crawford 156).

01:26:24

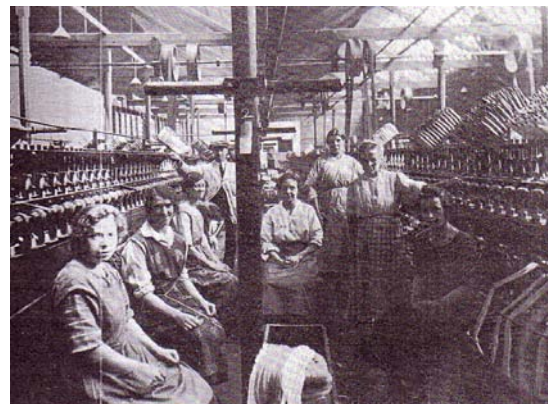


Figure 48: employees of a Belfast Linen mill,
Belfast an Industrial City Jonathan Bardon, Blackstaff Press Ltd. 1983. p.217.

Albert Ballentine

Patrick O'Reilly

Gerald Joseph

McClenaghan

Margaret Kilfedder

John Preshaw

David Thompson

Alfred Doyle

Brendan McNamee

Francis Jordan

Robert Suitters

Larry White

Kenneth Conway

James McGregor

Thomas Chapman

Michelle O'Connor

Margaret O'Neil

Joseph Branagh

Francis Bradley

Hugh Benedict Brankin

Christopher Phelan

Hugh Duffy

Alan Raymond

Thomas Irvine

Alan Ralph

John Patrick Rolston

Further, shipping and engineering, linen mills and textile machinery firms fueled Belfast's prosperity into the late nineteenth century. Conflict across the globe caused another boom in the linen industry, particularly in 1914, with the start of World War I (mainly for coarse linens for military tents, shipping and aeroplane fabric, and for bandages). By 1920, after the Great War of 1914 -18 and after the doubling of flax acreage there was a decline in the use of linen, especially dress linens due to more informal habits and domestic home environments that required less "exclusivity" (Collins 32). By the 1920s there were complaints that linen manufacture was "the destruction of agriculture...a spectacle for which we must go to Ireland" (Horner 1920: 52).



Figure 49: DNA reflections (detail) 2000.

Jacquard weave, cotton, rayon and linen threads 1080x1060mm.

Artist, Kelly Thompson, Locus Operandi exhibit at Dunedin Art Gallery, 2001.

Edited from Artist Statement: Travelling between and becoming located/dislocated involve space and it is in space that Thompson's working processes are manifest... Spaces of self and other can today be conditional upon our technologies of conversation: that is, upon the tools we use to communicate with one another. The expansion of textual media (allowing, for instance, email between communication between Dunedin and Montreal) links people in disparate times and places and thus the self can be created without being self-present. This for the shaping of the self through textual forms and making/writing practices variously attaching to or separating from those we are in conversation with... The image of the map is often quite definite in the artist's work and sometimes barely hinted at through the longitudes and latitudes of the weave. In whichever guise, it makes it impossible to forget the process of travel so pervasively suggested in the work. ... the native plant is simultaneously an emblem of national identity and a device for the critical questioning of its assumed authenticity; and the digitally scanned chromosome references the continuously hybridising practice of colonist expansion.

01:28:00

Anthony Molloy

Andrew Johnston

James Carberry

Charles Irvine

Dennis Berry

Peter J. Willis

Edward Garside

Calvert Brown

Samuel R. McCarter

Robert J. McPherson

William Hanna

Francis O'Toole

Anthony Geraghty

Brian McCoy

Harris Boyle

Wesley Somerville

Joseph Toland

George McCall

Martin McMenamy

Patrick Crawford

Siobhan McCabe

John Hunter

Hugh Alexander Harris

Samuel Gunning

William John Gracey

Joanne McDowell

In 2005, Northern Ireland linen yarn is still widely available. I have bought it for use in my art installations in Seattle, USA at a store supplying warp threads for making carpets. Since 2000, high-tech redesign improvements have salvaged the flagging Irish textile industry, in a forced competitive edge to maintain its quality and pedigree. Specialised computerised Jacquard damask looms are a part of such redevelopments. Flax farming has been taken over by Belgium, Austria-Hungary and France with other leading producers Poland, Germany, Rumania, the Netherlands, and some grown in New Zealand, Australia, Japan, Argentina and Egypt. Linen is manufactured in Prague and Russia (Bardon 1982:124). In contemporary times, linen supplies 2% of the world textile demand, but linen is the only fabric in which the European Economic Community (EEC) dominates the rest of the world (Clark 147). In Northern Ireland, some decommissioned linen mills have been redeveloped into museums or heritage shopping malls for tourist value. However, it was not simply linen's economic importance, but its poetic resonance, that makes it evocative as the fabric of my memorial.

01:29:36

The poetics of linen

Investigations into the practicalities of linen help explain the associations of this ancient fabric with the body of the mother, with 'motherhood' tasks, and connections with the motherland. The making of cloth or involvement in rituals with cloth, create and reiterate intimate systems of meaning or relationships fundamental to genealogical narratives and domestic social obligations, which are echoed in the reproduction and sustainability of civil society.

I see myself as a part of a greater community of single Irishwomen who have migrated to Australia in the last two centuries. Our lives have been informed by the domestic duties of sewing and cleaning. For some, this has been in the form of paid work, which might necessitate working with and caring for linen. Tapestry weaver and art critic, Diana Wood Conroy, writing on the influence of displacement and migration in the creative oeuvre of contemporary Australian weavers, details her own

William J. Meaklin

Samuel Llewellyn

Cecil Anderson

Norman Kerr

Linda Boyle

John Finlay

David Davidson

William James Daniel

John McGleenan

Patrick Hughes

Colm Gerard McCartney

John P. Farmer

Robert Wilmot McCreight

Thomas Morris

John Barry

James Templeton

Stephen Geddis

Roger Goad

Robert James Frazer

Denis McAuley

Joseph Reid

Thomas Taylor

Leslie James Shephard

William Ronald McKee

James McKee

Nevin McConnell

familiarity with linen:

The linen thread has slight irregularities and a rigid quality familiar to me, as a weaver who has struggled to maintain an even tension in linen (1999: 124).

Indeed, while weaving is an accomplished art, more often hand-stitched cloth fragments are the only surviving records of the achievements of women. In the 1995 exhibition, *Secure the Shadow*, artists Anne Brennan and Anne Ferran commemorated this “mute testimony” through the “everyday cloth of empire” (1999: 112) in the housing of emigrant, indigent and infirm women at The Hyde Park Barracks in Sydney, 1848-1886. Many of these women had fled from The Great Irish Famine/*An Gorta Mor* (in Gaelic) of 1845-48.

A fragment of material woven of linen from the ancient era is rare. Wood Conroy underlines “the fundamental association of fabric with the body” (1999: 124) in notes accompanying her sketched illustration of Kyriacos Nicolaou’s mid-twentieth century find of a second century linen, now in the Paphos Museum:

This piece of cloth provides invaluable evidence for an everyday fabric of the second century, a linen garment or bag preserved through chance rather than as carefully chosen grave good or as a dedicatory offering to a deity.

The greatest area of cloth is 3 by 3 cm. The plain woven tabby cloth is set at approximately 14 threads to the centimetre both vertically and horizontally (warp and weft) to make a comparatively coarse linen cloth. The direction of the twist appears to be S-spun, from right to left. This is the opposite of the typical modern spun thread, which is Z-spun from left to right...Egyptian linen cloth is often much finer; for example, fragments of Coptic linen cloth from Tell el Amarna in the Nicholson Museum, Sydney, have up to 40 threads per centimetre (Nicholson Museum no. 62.649)

01:31:12

John Johnston

Denis Mullan

John Carthcart

William George Herron

William D. Hamilton

Patricia McGrenaghan

Peter Brian Hamill

Robert Anthony Lloyd

Grace Lodhuis

Andrew James Craig

Michael O'Toole

George Alphonsus Quinn

John Doherty

Michael Reynolds

Leo Norney

William James Hardy

John Snoddy

Brendan Doran

Margaret Hale

Francis Donnelly

Marie McGrattan

Gerard Grogan

Ronald Winters

Thomas Murphy

John Stewart

Irene Nicholson

Ancient textiles survive only through extreme conditions, either very arid, such as the tomb finds from Egypt, or in deep-frozen soils as in Pazyryk in Siberia (Wood Conroy 2000:228).

In notes from Wood Conroy's published archeological journal she says:

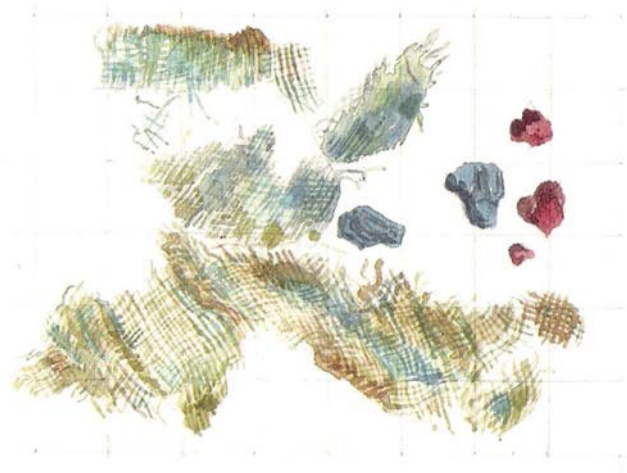


Figure 50: Fragment of linen cloth, 7.5 cm in length. House of Dionysis, second century AD. *The Fabric of the Ancient Theatre* Diana Wood Conroy, Moufflon Publications Ltd., Cyprus, 2004.

I did a meticulous watercolour drawing of each thread of the fragment, feeling a contained excitement to see the slight wobble in the spin of the linen fibre (2004:126).

Since the mid-1990s, a series of journals entitled *Reinventing Textiles* has worked to reinvigorate the position of textile craft traditions, specifically in relation to contemporary avant-garde practice. It is a movement that has a similar dynamism to the feminist valorization of domestic handicrafts in the 1970s. In a paper in this journal, Wood Conroy emphasized the importance of not overlooking textiles because of their “essential transience in the archeological record” (1999:120). She states that dismissing or leaving unexamined archeological evidence of preserved textiles may erase the significance of the “relationships formed by their making” (ibid.:126). She presents some general theoretical connections

Mark Dodd

Fred Aubrey Reid

Samuel Swanson

Andrew Freeman

William John Stevenson

Alice McGuinness

David Smyth Love

Richard McCann

David Edward Gleeson

Graham Ronald Tuck

Ernest Dowds

Sean McNamee

David Anthony Wray

Andrew Baird

Stewart Robinson

John Greer

Bernadette Friel

Billy Wright

Thomas Osborne

Gordon Hamilton-Fairley

Peter McKearney

Jane McKearney

James Emmet Griffen

Robert Elliman

Eileen Kelly

Seamus McCusker

01:32:48

about the relation of textiles to migration and displacement; to rituals regarding lamentation, identity and the body; to Indigenous relationships to the land; to kin/genealogy; and argues for a complex perspective on women's historical position between the public and the private. Her concluding statement has informed my memorial project: that material forms of thread, cloth and weaving, particularly by migrant artists to Australia, "allow metamorphoses, transformations from all the forgettings, all the loss, in a fresh sequence of 'handing on'" (ibid.: 129).

Wood Conroy has documented the ways in which linen has been used for sacraments, ceremonies and vestments in religious ceremony, and is the chosen fabric to shroud the dead in a number of cultures. Irish historian, Brenda Collins, offers similar remarks in the introduction of her publication, *Flax to Fabric*, for the Lisburn Museum and Irish Linen Centre:

St Matthew's Gospel tells how Joseph of Arimathea was given the task of wrapping the body of Christ in a shroud of linen cloth...The ceremonial use of linen expanded with the spread of Christianity (Collins 7).

Wood Conroy overtly references an 'other-worldly' realm, as well as considering how memories of kinship, are held within the smell and tactility of embodied textile fragments:

The understanding that textiles were part of the bodily realm appears in an influential book by the fourth-century philosopher Porphyry...He points out, 'The body is a garment with which the soul is invested' just as the 'heavens are called by the ancients a veil' because they are like 'the vestments of the celestial Gods' (Porphyry translated by Taylor 1991: 37-8 qtd by Wood Conroy 1999:126-7).

Like relationships...textiles such as those described by Porphyry... can be seen indirectly through an imprint on a harder material, a kind of negative casting. In a [Cyprus] tomb...knives were found that had been wrapped in a series of

Thomas Berry

Columba McVeigh

James Fogarty

Stanley Irwin

John Bell

John Kelly

Joseph Nesbitt

John Martin Brown

Owen McVeigh

Jack McAllister

Comgall Casey

Michael Duggan

John Francis Batey

Thomas McNamee

Thomas James Haddock

Joseph Clements

Audrey Edgson

Theodore Williams

Simon John Francis

James Duncan

Peter McDonald

Michael Sampson

Francis Crossan

Robert Scott

Patrick Maxwell

Samuel Clarke

01:34:24

plain linen cloths – the grid of the cloth is corroded into the knives as the fibres of linen became permeated with the metallic oxides from the bronze (Todd 75-193 qtd in Wood Conroy 1999: 127)...like strange, cross-gendered objects (ibid.:127).



Figure 51: My mother, Maureen Trouton, ironing the linen handkerchiefs
Canada, 2002.

Seamus Heaney, Ireland/Northern Ireland's poet laureate, recalls ideas of intimate connectedness through textiles – specifically in the repetitive, shared performance of folding linen sheets. He wrote the poem as a memorial to his mother, entitled 'In memoriam: M.K.H, 1911- 1984'. The following is an excerpt from it:

The cool that came off sheets just off the line
Made me think the damp must still be in them
But when I took my corners of the linen
And pulled against her, first straight down the hem
And then diagonally, then flapped and shook
The fabric like a sail in a cross-wind,
They'd make a dried-out undulating thwack.
So we'd stretch and fold and end up hand to hand

Ross McWhirter

Archibald Waller

John Hayes

John Houston

Noel Shaw

Paul Fox

Laura Crawford

Charles McNaul

Alexander Mitchell

James Lochrie

Sean Campbell

Ronald Trainor

Cyril McDonald

Colin McInnes

Jack Rooney

Hugh Waters

Michael Francis Donnelly

Patrick Donnelly

Trevor Bracknell

Christina Hughes

Seamus Anthony Mallon

Richard Beattie

William Scott

1976

Sylvia McCullough

01:36:00

For a split second as if nothing had happened
 For nothing had that had not always happened
 Beforehand, day by day, just touch and go,
 Coming close again by holding back
 In moves where I was x and she was
 Inscribed in sheets she'd sewn from ripped-out flour sacks.

Heaney uses the reconfigured bed sheets made out of linen flour bags as a metaphor to movingly evoke the sentiments of touch, intimacy and love (24). He references longing for the maternal and those everyday rituals between family members, which structure the intimate patterns of everyday ritual and dialogue in the family setting. "Hand to hand" and "just touch and go" summon up imagery of the fragile, repetitive conditions needed to create togetherness and dialogue. The constructed linen bed-sheet was pieced together from an earlier, rougher version of linen bags used to transport flour. His poetic example speaks to my creative project, not only in its reference to linen in everyday life for a certain generation in Northern Ireland, but in its documentation of the material as a focus and a linking object in the repetitive/reverent 'dialogue' between two different, but intimate persons. As in the discussion of sculptor Richard Serra's work discussed in chapter six, Heaney's imagery suggests how repeated encounters with a complex object bigger than oneself can be of great benefit to gaining awareness, as well as in sustaining connectivity between persons in civic life.



Chain

01:37:36

John Martin Reavey
 Brian Reavey
 Barry O'Dowd
 Joe O'Dowd
 Declan O'Dowd
 Clifford Evans
 Robert Walker
 Joseph Lemmon
 Reginald Chapman
 Walter Chapman
 Kenneth Worton
 James McWhirter
 Robert Chambers
 John McConville
 John Bryans
 Robert Freeburn
 Henry McAdams
 John Marks
 Michael Dickson
 Edward McQuaid
 Ian Gallagher
 Mary Dornan
 Martin McDonagh
 Rosemary Bleakley
 Samuel Millar
 Sarah O'Dwyer

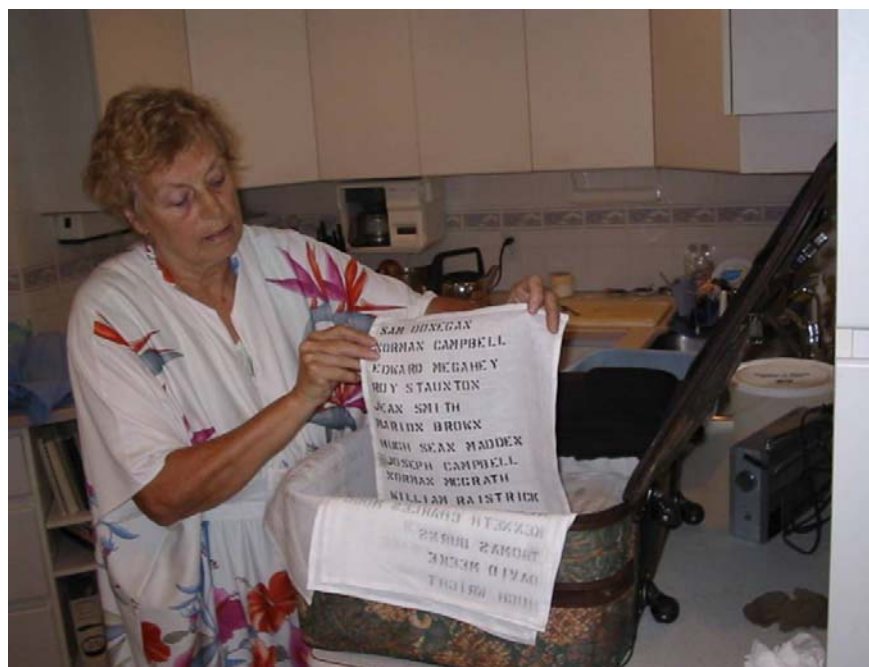


Figure 52: My mother, Maureen Trouton, in her kitchen
Vancouver, B. C., Canada,
helping me prepare the linen handkerchiefs to travel to Australia. 2002.

That connectivity can occur in the most unexpected circumstances.
Ulster's industrialisation was gained, in part, by the central role of the
linen trade. Yet, Northern Ireland's first female textile trade unionist
leader, Saidie Patterson, reflected in 1986:

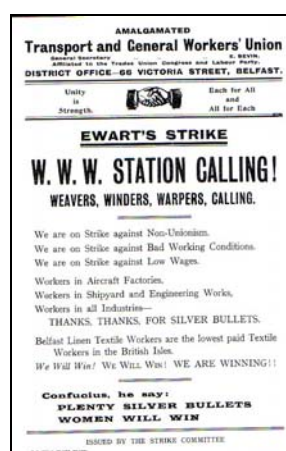


Figure 53: Historic strike leaflet of the Amalgamated Transport and General
Workers' Union.

James Reid

Mark Ashford

Seamus Brendon O'Brien

John Arrell

Kieran McCann

Niall O'Neill

John Morrow

George Bell

Neville Cummings

Patrick Joseph Quail

David McDowell

Samuel Fulton Neill

John Patrick Tennyson

Joseph Raymond Mayes

David McGilton

William Peter Armstrong

Joseph McAlinden

Martin McCrossan

Anthony Reavey

Samuel Hollywood

John Smiley

Hugh Woodside

John Edward McGready

Thomas Gerald Rafferty

Rachel McLernon

Robert McLernon

01:39:12

We produced the finest linen in the world, yet some of our women had to go home at night and eat from a table covered with yesterday's newspaper (14).



Figure 54: Sadie Patterson with a sample of her linen and lace work.

From the early nineteen twenties she had been active in the Belfast Girls' Club Union, an organization established for mill workers in the Victorian era by women from wealthy industrial families, and recalled the unintended political lessons learnt there through practical activities like needlework:

Certainly, I've yet to meet a girl who doesn't like beautiful underwear, but far more important we were teaching them, Protestant and Catholic together, what we could do on the basis of self-help and cooperation (19).

Patterson used her experience as a linen mill worker and union leader as a peace activist in Northern Ireland in the 1970s. In 1976, she organized one of the largest marches for peace in Northern Ireland. Saidie Patterson formed an unusual alliance with two notoriously divided,

Mark Bunting

James Blakely

William Henry Murtagh

Thomas Joseph Quinn

Archibald Hanna

Raymond Carlisle

William Hamer

Sean Bailey

Frank Stagg

James O'Neill

William Wilson

Anthony Doherty

James McGrillen

Mary Veronica Sloan

Mary Sloan

Doris McGrath

Colin Lynch

Paul Best

Desmond Finney

Marjorie Lockington

Joseph McCullough

Kenneth Leneghan

Harold Blair

Alexander Jamison

Myles O'Reilly

Patrick Anthony O'Reilly

01:40:48

violent working class areas of Belfast, the Shankill (Protestant) and Falls (Catholic) districts.



Figure 55: Sadie Patterson planting a memorial peace cross for her nephew, 1979.

01:42:24

Conclusion

A 'pieced-together' fabric memorial embodies the memory of the rupture of sectarian violence. The intimate monument in a linen grid of handkerchiefs is a metaphor for the possibility of a newly blended, post-1998 Northern Ireland. The specifics of flax farming and linen manufacture reference the settlement and colonisation of all peoples



Figure 56: 2002-4 Logo made by Lycia for the *Fabric(ation)s of the Postcolonial* project, University of Wollongong: an investigation of the links between textiles, literary theory(text) and colonialism.

Patrick Mohan

Samuel Smyth

Robert Dorman

Harry Scott

Alexander Sherwood Frame

Nicholas White

Julius Stephen

John Donnelly

Andrew Small

James Francis McCaughey

Joseph Kelly

Patrick Barnard

Mary Fegan

Donald Traynor

Roderick Bannon

John Pearson

David Ferguson

William John McCutcheon

Robert Lennox

Margaret Gamble

Robert McConnell

Sean McDermott

Gillian J.B. Liggett

William Herron

Elizabeth Herron

Noeleen Herron



Figure 57: brochure, Irish Linen Centre & Lisburn Museum,
Northern Ireland tourist Board, 1996.

in the North of Ireland: the Anglican ascendancy, Presbyterians and Catholics. On the memorial, the names of those killed are from various differently-perceived political backgrounds. Irish linen is a part of a rich material culture from its colonial trade history, particularly during the Industrial Revolution in Ulster's 'linen triangle'. Romantic images of Northern Ireland evoke smelly rural flax retting pools, scutching



Figure 58: 'Bleaching Greens' at Glenmore, Lisburn, Northern Ireland.
Cloth and Human Experience
Ed.s Weiner & Schneider, Smithsonian Institution Press, London, 1989. p. 203.

Patrick Dillon

Francis Mallon

Michael Sweeney

Peter Cleary

Vincent Hamilton

Harry McAleese

Rachel Hyams

John Cummings

William Ronald Crooks

James Edward Byrne

Robert Joseph Hawkins

Matthew Campbell

Edward Richard Stewart

Seamus Ludlow

Stanley Arthurs

Gregory Brown

Henry Francis Keys

Francis Joseph Kettyles

Thomas Henry Evans

Felix Clancy

Sean O'Hagan

Robert McCullough

Henry McMahon

Francis Heaney

James Hunter

Kenneth David Nelson

01:44:00

mills thick with heavy dust, and beautiful-looking bleaching greens with swaths of lengthy linen bolts rolled out beside the river. Rural and industrial processes of spinning and weaving linen, together with the wear and care processes of Irish linen fabric have taken on a mythology of their own in Irish literature and the arts. White linen has an appeal to a symbolic idea of intimacy which seems universal and ancient: a material that is sacred to life's defining moments of ritual celebration, and was used extensively in daily domestic situations in the bedroom and dining room, if one could afford it. White linen handkerchiefs are still used in gift-giving at points of departure, and my maternal grandmother sent me many over the years. Archaeological findings show us linen's fragility over time, but also its durability and eternal qualities. Saidie Patterson's biography links the importance of inter-communication, between groups from different sides of the political divide in textile mills, to her later activism on behalf of peace in N.I. Linen in *The ILM* can be seen as a material sign of cultural change to celebrate various versions of Northern Irish identity; together, the handkerchiefs make a pattern showing the interdependence necessary in a society which honours care and a stable home life.

Endnotes

¹ A narrow banded linen cloth (made for sale up until the eighteenth century) (Bardon 1982:97).

² A sense of the patronising British attitude to the linen industry on Irish soil is stated by H.S. Tremeneheere, a gentleman Commissioner, who was sent from parliament to report on the 'colonial benevolence' of linen manufacturers in Ireland, in 1856. Tremeneheere describes employers as full of kindness and generosity, possessing the "affection and respect of their work-people, who often, in the difficulties and dangers of life, look up to them for counsel and support."

³ 'Scutching' is separating the brittle, woody, outer parts of the stem to make the flax more fibrous. The first scutch mill was set up in Holywood, County Down, in the 1740s. River power drove the rollers and wooden blades. In the eighteenth century, scutch mills were crucial to the industry and, by approximately 1850 there

01:45:36

Roy McIlwaine
William Martin
Anthony James Gallagher
Thomas Dobson
Robert Dobson
Roberta Bartholomew
John McCambridge
Gerard Masterson
Brian Garvin
Paul Hamill
David Robinson
John Ritchie
Frederick McLoughlin
Linda Baggley
Ronald McAdam
Jackie Parsons
David Spratt
William Herbert Spring
Alexander Patterson
Robert Groves
Edward McMurray
Colm Mulgrew
James Coyle
Samuel Corr
Daniel McNeill
Edward Joseph Farrell

were around 1000 flax scutching mills in Northern Ireland; by World War I, production had fallen.

Working conditions were hazardous with poor ventilation from the dust, which was thick with fibre in the air (Collins 15). The work was mainly done by women who worked barefoot as the factory floor would be flooded with water. Many workers fell ill with tuberculosis and/or foot problems.

⁴ ‘Steeping’ or ‘retting’ flax is arranging one layer and anchoring this with stones “just below the surface of a slowly flowing stream or pond. This process takes from ten days to two weeks, loosens the cellulose fibres from the plant’s woody core and surrounding bark. The water ferments the resins and gums that hold these parts together, yielding as a by-product a fetid, pungent smelling scum and sediment capable of killing fish. This explains the many laws that govern the disposal of retting water, as well as the places where retting could take place (Warden 1864: 36-40 in Schneider 201). Bog-holes in Ireland did very well for retting flax (Charley 1862: 132).

⁵ ‘Hackling’ or ‘heckling’ was a process whereby flax stalks were twisted, shaken and beaten to remove all the remnants of gum, resin, and short fibres or ‘tow’. This was done with graded combs made by a blacksmith. The shredding of long fibres to remove such impurities took considerable skill and was done by itinerant workers (Schneider 202). Also, it was thought to be ‘women’s work’ and men had to learn an ‘artificial weakness’ to engage in it (Horner 1920: 379 qtd. in Schneider 202).

⁶ Traditionally, cellulose fibres have been difficult to dye.

⁷ at least 4 – 7 weeks, according to the season and weight of the fabric (Charley 1862:102-3).

⁸ There are many accounts of the hazards of shortening this process (by lime or acid which over-oxidizes “the delicate fibres” (Coons and Koob, 1980; Horner 1920; Trotman and Trotman 1948 qtd. in Schneider 2002).

⁹ ‘Beetling’ is the name given to the process in which linen webs are pounded or stamped, for a day to a fortnight, to flatten and close the threads together and impart to fabrics their highly prized gloss-sheen (Clark 152).

Christopher Byers

Paul McNally

William Palmer

Edward Walker

Liam Prince

Daniel McCann

Gerard Stitt

Patrick Meehan

Robert Craven

Wesley Nicholl

William Rankin

Edward Anthony McNeill

Richard Doherty

Sydney McAvoy

Francis Dominic Rice

Gerard Henry McMahon

John Martin

Ruby Kidd

Francis James Walker

Joseph McBride

Daniel Mackin

John William Freeburn

William Snowdon

Bernard Coyle

Charles Oliver Eaton

Brian Palmer

01:47:12

The beetling engine, 1730, replaced hand-beating. One of the first beetling engines to have been set up was by a Dutchman in 1725 on the Lagan river at Drum Bridge. Drapers embraced and adopted this new technology (which used water power) (Bardon 1982:98).

¹⁰ By the mid-1800s, Irish flax cultivation and linen production was pressured out of the international market by the gradual introduction of the Scottish and English systems of large-scale tillage farming. Flax farming had suited the small-scale Irish peasant, because tenant-farmers cultivated flax on rotation between the potato-growing seasons but competition from cheaper cotton goods further undermined the subsistence economy of the people in Ireland:

View the north of Ireland and you behold a whole province peopled by weavers; it is they who cultivate, or rather beggar, the soil, as well as work the looms...The lands are infinitely subdivided (and the weaver...has always a piece of potatoes, a piece of oats, a patch of flax, and grass for a cow.” (Horner 1920: 52 qtd in Schneider 203-4)

During the 1920s and 30s the world market for linen declined. “Ulster provided about two thirds of all American linen imports in the 1930s and maintained other important markets in the Empire. Ulster’s position as a world provider was still unrivalled – only the market size had declined” (Collins 32).

¹¹ According to Bardon, bleach works began in 1743 on the Callan river, with 36 (along banks and tributaries) in 1771 which finished 108,500 pieces and 2,712,500 yards of linen (1982:98).

¹² The inventions necessary for spinning and manufacturing cotton warp had not yet occurred. The cotton spinning frame, jenny and mule were invented 1769 – 92. By the end of the Industrial Revolution, with the inventions of the cotton spinning frame, jenny and mule (1769 – 79), the British saw fit to develop the cotton industry, in Ulster. The importation of raw cotton from the tropical colonies was more cost-effective, allowing European soils to be left for food staples (Slicher van Bath 1963). In 1811, 50,000 persons in greater Belfast had been re-employed in cotton mills or home hand-loom weaving (Collins 20). New inventions from the cotton industry were translated to linen, resulting in a 1780s flax spinning process, only applicable to ‘coarse linen yarn’, the type used for canvas. (Collins 20-21).

01:48:48

Frank Scott

Oliver Woulahan

James McCallion

Earnest Moore

William Miller

Samuel Gerald Gardiner

Vincent Heatherington

William Miller

James Rooney

Mervyn McDonald

Rosaleen McDonald

Thomas McKenzie

Gerald Gilmore

James Francey

Peter McElcar

Patrick Cannon

Gordon Liddle

Christopher Ewart-Biggs

Judith Cook

David Evans

Patrick Francis McNeice

George Johnston

Joseph Watson

Daniel McGrogan

Robert Scott

John McLeave

¹³ Interlinings were the main product from linen.

¹⁴ A class of middlemen who bought the cloth from the weavers for cash and had it bleached and exported. Originally distinct from bleachers, by the 19th century the two categories merged (Clark 10 & 152).



01:50:24

John Mackey

James Doherty

Thomas Cush

William John Bovaird

Cornelius Neeson

Alan Trevor Watkins

*Robert Thompson
McCreight*

James R. Borucki

Joanne Maguire

Andrew Maguire

Daniel Lennon

John Maguire

Michael Quigley

Majella O'Hare

Betty McDonald

Gerald McGleenan

Robert Walker

William Creighton

Thomas Passmore

James Heaney

Joseph Dempsey

Jeanette Dempsey

Bridget Anne Dempsey

Patrick John Cunningham

Samuel Hunt

Case Studies

Chapter 4

Public Needlework Projects led by Women Artists

This chapter focuses on how women communicate messages of interconnectedness and anti-violence, through the medium of textiles-needlework. The interface between the intimate practice of needlework in small women's groups, public installation-performance art in the political arena is explored. Monumental textiles-based projects can be considered 'new genre public art' (see Lacy 1995) combining textiles with performance-process work, installation and public site. The projects I have chosen to research are Justine Merritt's *Ribbon around the Pentagon*, 1982-85, Suzanne Lacy's *The Crystal Quilt*, 1987 and *Women-In-Black*, 1988 to the present.

Gloria Orenstein, USA, known for her writing on the women surrealists since the early 1970s, posits that expressive creative gatherings can be catalysts for political and social change:

The ceremonial aspect of art is now understood to be potent enough to...evoke visions...thoughts, and images that, when merged with the energy of political acts (such as the protests at the Diablo Canyon nuclear power plant, the Livermore Weapons Lab, the Nevada Test Site, the women's peace camp at the Greenham military base in England, and the Women's Pentagon Action [The Ribbon Around the Pentagon]) can create a critical mass powerful enough to alter the energy field of the participants. The rituals enhance and augment the political actions, binding the participants together in a shared spiritual community and creating the opportunity for healing (1990: 279).

01:52:00

Thomas Hall

Charles Victor Moody

Peter Gerard Johnston

Albert Graig

Joseph Paton

Seamus Muldoon

Pauline Anne Doherty

George Samuel Rankin

Fredrick McLoughlin

Michael Boothman

Rosaleen Kyle

Victor Thomas Dormer

Kevin Oliver Mulhern

Brian Stewart

Catherine O'Connor

Francis Thomas Nolan

Arthur McKay

Roy Hamilton

Yvonne Dunlop

Sean Patrick McCrystal

Anne Magee

Annie Brennan

Peter Francis Woolsey

Edward Donnelly

William Henry Corrigan

Paul Marlowe



Figure 59: The public performance, 1982-1985.
Linda Pershing, *The Ribbon around the Pentagon: Peace by Piecemakers*,
University of Tennessee Press, Knoxville, 1996.

New and important contemporary associations are emerging in the sculptural and public art use of textiles, particularly in the exploring of postcolonial identity issues in textiles installation art. Textiles and clothing are an ideal 'mobile' medium to represent the late twentieth century migrant experience. Janis Jefferies, fibre sculptor/critic and digital textile designer, has identified distinct political subtexts which are part of the theoretical developments of art textiles. She and her colleague Sarat Maharaj, formerly at Goldsmiths College, University of London, outline the interconnected text/textile references and its impact on contemporary art in Britain in the early 1990s. Jefferies emphasizes the connection of textiles with the body and the comforts of home by quoting Maharaj from his essay, 'Textile Art – Who are you?':

Should we comprehend 'Textile Art' under the chameleon figure of the [Derrida's] 'undecidable'? ...However much the 'quilt' aspires to the state of 'artwork'...we never quite manage to set aside its ties with the world of uses and functions, with the notion of wrapping up, keeping warm, sleep and comfort, some feeling of hearth and home. In all of this, it is no less easy to blank out memories of its links with the domain of processes, crafts and techniques ... Half-on-wall, half-on-floor, it stands/lies/hangs before us: everyday object and artwork in one go. Domestic commodity which is at the same time the

01:53:36

Francis Fitzsimmons

Joseph Surgenor

Michael Clerkin

Bernard Joseph McCarron

Anthony Abbott

Leslie Corrigan

Joseph Wilson

James Kyle

Maire Drumm

Stanley Adams

Stephan McCann

John Maguire

Charles Corbett

Noel McCabe

Cornelius McCrory

Samuel John McConnell

Georgina Strain

Eugene McDonagh

Carol McMenamy

Ronald Bond

James Speers

Patrick Joseph Smyth

Winston McCaughey

John Patch

George Lutton

James Joseph Duffy

conceptual device...Not entirely either and yet both, an 'undecidable'..."Has the quilt not always straddled such a double-coded space, an ambivalent site of this sort? (Maharaj qtd. in Jefferies 2001: 5).

My interest lies in textile objects as they represent simultaneously both the sacred, in their historic, ceremonial, or religious use, for rituals of life's defining passages, as well as the profane, e.g. the use of cloth to care for a body inflicted with wounds or debased by violent acts. Textiles are symbolic of interconnectedness, as touch is an inherent component of cloth. Textiles/needlework has been used as a vehicle by which international and local women's groups. These groups often are led by female artists or crafts workers, who have emphasized publicly interconnection and the need for a safe, secure community in which to live. Such creative projects may be both progressive and conservative at the same time, tending to fall between 'the simultaneous elements of social conformity and critique' (Pershing 1993: 333). The use of non-confrontational techniques has been intrinsic to both women's domestic craft practices, and the socially accepted means by which women have historically congregated for personal discussion, often on political issues.

Women have felt comfortable with the intimacy-secrecy whereby needlework processes and techniques can convey 'encoded political statement,' (Pershing 1993: 338), communicating controversial ideas specific and dear to them, which could be seen as radical or divisive in the greater public arena. Linda Pershing, USA, has pointed out in *Peace Work out of Piecework* how armed conflict endangers existence, metaphorically causing strain and wear in the greater social fabric (ibid.: 341, 345). Analyses of women's moral and ethical decision-making processes, as articulated by educational psychologist Carol Gilligan, USA, reflect a prioritization of the values of interrelationship and care. Community sewing and crafting groups bear such hallmarks, showing:

William Derek Kidd

Maurice Murphy

John Toland

Joseph Glover

Andrew Crocker

James Loughrey

John Joseph McLoughlin

Philomena Green

Frank McConnellogue

Elizabeth Luney

Joseph Scott

Geraldine McKeown

Howard Edwards

Roy Young

Norman Campbell

Patrick Michael McGeown

John Joseph Savage

Thomas Easton

Josephine McGeown

Samuel G. Armour

Paul Kerr

James Liggett

1977

Graeme Dougan

David Hind

01:55:12

How people relate to and manipulate objects in order to express themselves, their notions of identity, and their personal and cultural values (see Bronner, 1983, 1986; Jones, 1980; Sherzer and Sherzer, 1976) (Pershing 1993: 335).

My interest in textiles projects by women is not an embrace of essentialism or an idealistic call towards maternalism. I acknowledge that early feminist politics such as the activism of Marie Verone, France, in World War I, took as its basis “the moral infallibility of women” (Scott 2002:13), yet the extension of “the reach of our [women’s] politics well beyond protests against gender discrimination” echoes “an old feminist claim that women’s interests are society’s interests” (Scott 2002:13).

Armed conflict, and its attendant violence, are disrespectful of life and shatter home and community interrelations, where women have often exercised significant degrees of control. Women artists have used textile metaphors to particular effect in public needlework projects, to subtly remind a mainstream audience of the civilized social order, where interconnectedness between people of difference and the value of the rhythms of ordinary domestic experience. My evolving mobile memorial, *The Irish Linen Memorial*, takes such a sculptural-interdisciplinary approach to needlework. Both the intimate craft processes and the public aspect of my needlework project typify two contradictory aspects of stereotypical femininity. Embroidery, as has been well documented by Rosita Parker, 1984, is symbolic of feminine virtuousness and duty. In contrast, the spots of sewn hair that mar the white linen, remind viewers of the baseness of the body and the human emotional states inflicted by trauma, such as hysteria, often considered a peculiarly feminine pathology.

As well as being complex, crafted objects in themselves, textiles inherently define movement through costuming in performance. My collaborator, choreographer-dancer, Elizabeth Cameron Dalman explains:

Martin E. Walsh
Edward Muller
William James Greer
Seamus Harvey
James Elliott McColgan
Michael McHugh
Thomas John Boston
John Joseph Lowther
George Muncaster
Frank Moyna
Patrick L. McNulty
James Curtis Moorehead
Jeffrey Agate
Joseph Morrissey
Robert Harrison
Frank McCarroll
Alvar Green
Samuel McKane
Brian Canavan
Peter Hill
Joseph Pat Campbell
Robert Mitchell
Joseph Long
James Cordner
John Lee
Donald Robinson

01:56:48

The symbolism of the material becomes a part of the choreography. Lycia's work interests me because of the human rights issue and anti-war expression. I think the arts are a very powerful vehicle to be able to reach people's hearts; to actually reach people on a human level, different from the political, and make people think about the issues. (Radio interview with Sylvie Stern and Lycia Trouton, 2XX FM, Canberra, February 9, 2004).

Description of Artwork: *The Ribbon around the Pentagon, 1982-5.*



01:58:24

Figure 60: on-site protest

Linda Pershing, *The Ribbon around the Pentagon: Peace by Piecemakers*, The University of Tennessee Press, Knoxville, 1996.

Cameron Dalman's approach is reiterated in the objectives of the major public work, *The Ribbon around the Pentagon*, (*The Ribbon*) USA, (1982-85). This work was conceived by Justine Merritt. Merritt, an educator and needle-worker, (who entitled her classes 'Embroidered Memories'), had been inspired by the communal needlework of Judy Chicago's exhibit, *The Dinner Party*, late 1970s. *The Ribbon* was conceived as 'an immense ...decorated fabric to tie around the Pentagon,' in preparation for the commemoration, August 4, 1985, of the fortieth anniversary of the atomic bombing of Hiroshima and

Rory O'Kelly

Myles Scullion

John Reid

Norman Sharkey

William D. Brown

James Nicholson

David McQuillan

Alexander Watters

Daniel Gerard Carville

Larry Potter

David Graham

Hester McMullan

Francis Cassidy

Hugh William Clarke

Sean Prendergast

Gerald C. Cloete

John T. McCracken

Kenneth Sheehan

Myles Vincent McGrogan

Kevin McMenamin

John Short

William Edgar

Trevor McKibbin

William Strathearn

Sean Campbell

Brian Smith

Nagasaki, (Pershing 1993:327). 'It acted as a ceremonial plea for peace' with embroidered text and imagery signifying things which Merritt described as, 'I cannot bear to think of as lost forever in a nuclear war.' The Pentagon was chosen, in Merritt's words as 'a symbol of my nation's violence and of my own.' (Philbin 1985:11; Pershing 1993: 328) The final production involved a crowd of thousands and a ritual-performance with the 'flowing band of cloth' composed of 25,000 panels, 'more than fifteen times the number needed to surround the Pentagon.' (Pershing 1993: 1-2). Mary Francis Jaster, its national coordinator, spoke about touching "enough individuals [so that] 'the powers that be' could be challenged by that" (ibid.: 332).

The Ribbon around the Pentagon's impact was felt not just in its performance, but even more strongly in the making process. Dialogue among the women¹ occurred through this comfortably familiar crafting, as they produced and planned a monumental display of the group's closely held values, typically estranged in the greater public arena. This was a safe way for primarily Caucasian, middle-class women, to build a national community over a two-year period, in a meaningful artistic and conceptual project. *The Ribbon* communicated a moving, easily communicated message which drew upon the emotive sentiment of touch, through handicraft, together with its aligned ideas of connection, healing and life-giving values. Although the Reagan's governmental military or nuclear policy was not altered as a result, a critical mass of the American public witnessed this cultural event, and participants felt transformed by the exhibiting of anti-violence concepts, in a beautiful way, which was 'a matter of conscience' to many (Pershing 1993: 332-3).

The political use of textiles was prefigured by other twentieth century women's protests. In 1995, Jefferies commented on how the primary means of communicating and staging such a message through event-demonstrations is often accomplished specifically through the fabric arts:

02:00:00

John McBride
Brendan O'Callaghan
Patrick Joseph Devlin
Eric Shiells
Edward Coleman
James Green
Robert Edward Crawford
Harry Bradshaw
John Geddis
William C. Hobbs
Douglas Deering
Robert Nairac
Robert North
Daniel McCooley
Christopher Shaw
Rowland Hill
Malachy Gregory
Samuel Derek Davison
Kenneth Norman Lynch
Hugh Martin
James Boyd McClurg
Gerald Tucker
Robert Walter Whitten
John Wesley Milliken
Gerald McCullough
Michael Harrison

...Textiles have been mobilized as banners for Suffragette resistance, trade union rights, wrapping the Greenham Common [anti-nuclear protest] fence and honouring those who have died of AIDS (1995:164).

The Ribbon project illustrates what USA architect Miwon Kwon calls 'art in the public interest', artist Suzanne Lacy calls 'new genre' and USA critic Lucy Lippard labels 'community-based' public art². By the mid-1990s, this kind of monumental public art became a common method of expression for women and minorities with limited opportunities for site-specific public commissions in the high-end fine arts market. *The Ribbon* involved non-commodity, site-contextual ways of working with public ritual in an era known for its overt materialism.

Description of Artwork: *The Crystal Quilt*, 1987

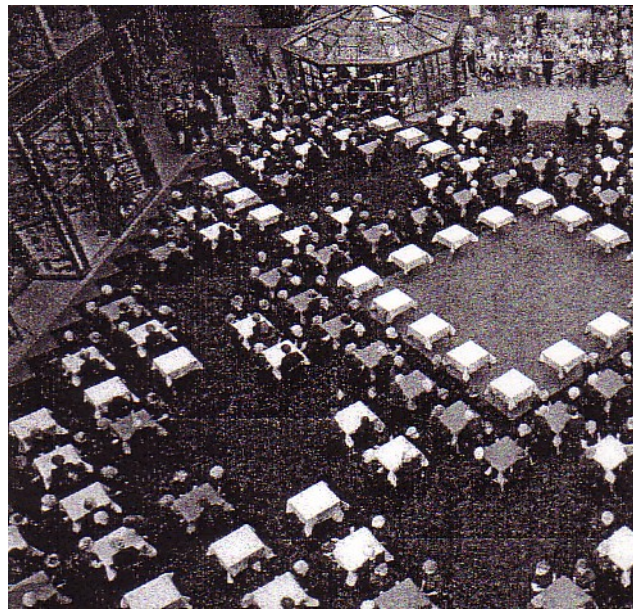


Figure 61: *The Crystal Quilt* installation – performance.

Suzanne Lacy advocates for the genre of large-scale public art or 'enormous, community art projects' which involve collaborators and participants (Cheng 129). Hers is a feminist-based practice

Richard Turnbull

David Morrow

William John Hutchinson

Thomas Graham Fenton

James H. Cobb

James McFall

Trevor McNulty

James Foots

Daniel Cowan

Thomas Tolan

John McCartan

Paul Jason McWilliams

Lewis J. Harrison

Neil Bewley

William Martin

Jack Marshall

William J. Smith

John William Lawlor

Hugh Rogers

Robin John Smyrl

Robert John Bloomer

Seamus Costello

Desmond Irvine

Margaret Ann Hearst

Frank Canavan

Herbert John Anderson

02:01:36

emphasizing the sociological themes of anti-violence and anti-racism. As a way of engaging the local population of a place and national media, Lacy expands the role of artist to include that of producer/coordinator during the lengthy planning period leading up to an event-installation. Meiling Cheng, *In Other Los Angeles: Multicentric Performance Art*, 2002, stated that there is a distinct contemporary Lacy School apparent – one that reconsiders “the space between artist and audience, or the participatory other/selves, and one which witnesses the affectability of the artwork-event” as central to the artistic project (authors’ italics; Cheng 130-131).

Lacy’s *The Crystal Quilt (The Quilt)*, 1987, although not specifically addressing anti-violence, has strongly influenced my artwork. *The Quilt* involved five hundred women-participants, twenty staff and fifteen collaborating artists, including painter Miriam Schapiro and sound artist, Susan Stone. *The Quilt* was displayed in the Philip Johnson-designed Crystal Court atrium of the prestigious high-rise, The IDS Centre, Minneapolis, Minnesota on Mother’s Day, 1987. Elderly women were seated at each of the four sides of square tables, positioned in a configuration designed by Schapiro to mimic a geometric canvas, as seen from a plan view and from upper balconies of the high-rise. The women were choreographed to fold and unfold yellow and red table napkins atop black tablecloths. Their movements were timed and each complemented one another’s tables. The sound element of the event was pre-recorded, making intimate conversations public on the day of the large gathering. This audio recording involved conversations between the women on issues pertinent to older women’s lives.

Mammoth group effort, shown in the organized public display of the minutiae of needlework, can make a ‘felt impact’ through its accompanying conceptual ideas and positive ethical values – the intergenerational survival skills of women. Thus, *The Crystal Quilt* positioned women’s expressive behaviour -- aesthetics, values, politics -- within a well-situated setting, that of a centralized

George Wilson
 Denis Michael Neill
 Walter Kerr
 Patrick Shields
 Samuel Murphy
 Marcia Gregg
 Colm McNutt
 Paul Harman
 James Clifford
 Gordon Quinn

1978

Cecil Grills
 Bernard Brown
 Martha McAlpine
 Jack Eaglesham
 William Gordon
 Lesley Gordon
 Mary Smyth
 Michael Scott
 Ian D. Corden-Lloyd
 Thomas Neeson
 Sandra Morris
 Christine Lockhart
 Ian McCracken
 Elizabeth McCracken

02:03:12

international corridor of power. The juxtaposition of that which is intimate or personal, to public life and procedures is a crucial part of this artwork. By situating craft processes within a significant architectural space, as did *The Ribbon* when it encircled the Pentagon, domestic concerns are made to occupy a status of equal importance to the historically male-privileged public space. Thus, *The Crystal Quilt* installation-performance, held on the day of the year which celebrates ‘mothering,’ added another layer to the narrative and memory of the building itself.

As part of *The Crystal Quilt*, Lacy developed a state-wide leadership organization for older women. Values associated with motherhood and/or the interests of older women, were foregrounded through *The Quilt*’s aesthetically pleasing, orderly choreographic ensemble. The expanded role of older women as knowledgeable spokespersons in contemporary community and public affairs was, thereby, reiterated and given visibility through this artwork and the silent or secretive needlework-quilting metaphor was turned on its head and made public.

02:04:48

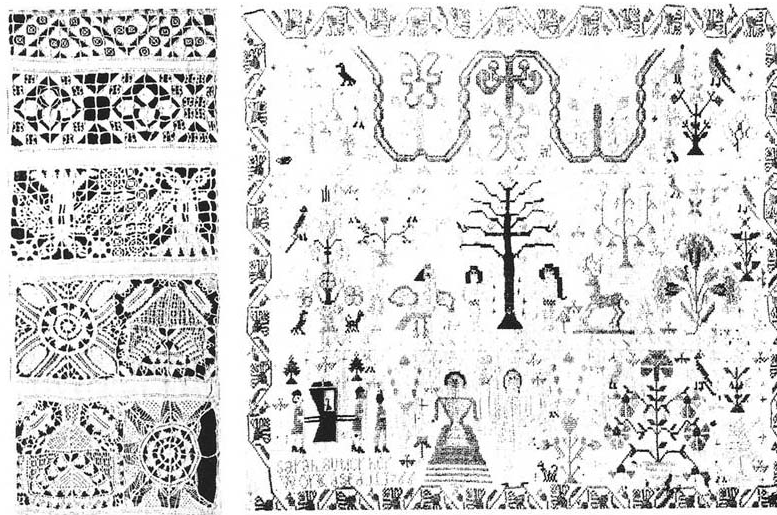


Figure 62: example of drawnwork

Contemporary folklore theorist Linda Pershing has encouraged the expansion of research into quilting metaphors over

Sarah Wilson Cooper

Daniel Magill

Carol Mills

Gordon Crothers

Paul Nelson

Dorothy Nelson

Joan Crothers

Paul Duffy

Charles M. Simpson

Paul Sheppard

Norma Spence

James Nowasad

Nicholas Smith

Thomas Trainor

Denis Kelly

David Jones

Brendan Megraw

William J. McKee

Robert McCullough

John Moore

Millar McAllister

John Collins

Brian Maguire

John McClory

Brian McKinney

Colette Brady

the last twenty years, into other needlework symbolism, like that of drawnwork. Drawnwork uses a complex and difficult technique of de-threading to enhance the borders of napkins, tablecloths and other domestic linens, 'elevating their status as everyday objects' (Jasper 1987:3; Pershing 1993: 345-7). A drawnwork metaphor may be used to discuss critical aspects of interpreting public protest in needlework-based artwork by 'those who are often trivialized or ignored by legislators and policymakers'. Drawnwork evokes the removal from the fabric of civil society of those life-affirming values in public policy-making (Pershing 344-5).

Description of Performance: *Women-in-Black*, 1988 – ongoing.



19

Figure 63: *Women-in-Black* documentation in a group exhibition, October, 2002. Seattle Community College, Seattle, Washington, U.S.A. Curator: Susan Platt, PhD. Photo: Lycia Trouton

Women-in-Black, a global protest movement, outside of the gallery system of contemporary art has attracted the membership of significant female artists, such as Seattle-based Selma Walden. Using broad-based textiles symbolism, *Women-in-Black* have a motto that 'silence is visible.'⁵ *Women-in-Black* stand still in quiet vigils (with 'time-and-place' parameters), wearing the dark color traditionally associated with mourning (in western countries).

Daniel McErlean

David J. Naden

Denis Heaney

Robert Struthers

Kevin Dyer

Hugh James McConnell

William Turbitt

Edward Ferguson

Denis Emmanuel Brown

Jackie Mailey

James Gerard Mulvenna

William Hanna

Patrick McEntee

Alan Ferguson

Jacob Rankin

John Boyle

Jack Fisher

Mark D. Carnie

Noel McKay

John Lamont

Alan D. Swift

Robert K. Millar

Thomas Gilbert Johnston

Michael Riley

Patrick Fee

Mary McCaffrey

02:06:24

Women-in-Black began demonstrating in 1988, specifically at a traffic intersection in Jerusalem, to protest the occupation of the West Bank and Gaza. Historian Joan Wallach Scott analyses *Women-in-Black* in a paper delivered at The Berkshire Conference on the History of Women, (a caucus of the American Historical Association) in 2002, as an effective anti-violence strategy and intelligent feminist methodology put into practice. Scott describes *Women-in-Black* as a feminist reverberation that honours difference, acknowledging the “complex realities of politics that acknowledge interconnected histories” (Scott 2002:11-12). Scott states that presumed fundamental differences among feminists and the possibility of “mutual recognition rather than the dissolution of differences” bears silent witness to abuses of power (ibid.:11-12). According to their 1998 annual report, *Women-in-Black* is opposed “to ethnic homogenization and militarism.” The group “takes the domain of large-scale politics as its own” (Scott 2002:12). The *Women-in-Black* concept has taken hold internationally and solidarity vigils have been held in response to the particulars of personal and state violence at various sites around the world, since 1991, (some more dangerous than others).

The intercultural underpinnings of the movement are summed up in this statement by Betty Reardon:

While there may be no common definition of peace with which all women throughout the world would agree, there are emerging notions of what constitutes peace and how it can be achieved (1996: 219).

Conclusion

A plurality of exhibition strategies and integration of non-traditional concepts, materials and methods have been reviewed in this chapter. Various United States women artists, working in groups, have used textiles-needlework symbolism as well as aspects of drapery or cloth, to protest violence, endemic in colonialism and postcolonial times. The new millennium may become a time when the tiresome

02:08:00

William McAlpine
Howard G. Donaghy
William Crawford
Brian Russell
Samuel McHugh
Tony Fisher
Joseph Skelly
James Taylor
Charles Henning
Letitia McGrory
Graham Lewis
William Smyth
Gareth Wheddon
Wesley Orr
Patrick Duffy
Albert Miles
Robert Batchelor
John McTier
James Burney
Glen Ling
Graham Duggan
Kevin Johnston

1979

Francis Mary Donnelly
Laurence Montgomery

definitions between High art and Low art, as put forth so persuasively since 1939 by Clement Greenberg, are in the process of being replaced. The women artist-organisers discussed in this chapter are visually redefining what it means to honour differences between persons. Their strategies are examples of how to give voice to creative practices which prioritise 'community(ies)-of-care'. In the processes of the creation of symbolic artistic-political ritual in the public arena, these artists are 'rethreading' the fragile, recuperative development work necessary in a society, such as Northern Ireland, emerging from conflict.

As the former High Commissioner for Human Rights, United Nations, and former President⁶ of the Republic of Ireland, Mary Robinson, related upon the receipt of a Sydney Peace Prize:

This has to be the century when women make a difference. Let me pay a special tribute here to...both international and local women's groups – in peace building...the Security Council and the General Assembly [has recently] afforded proper recognition to the leading role of women as actors for peace (2002).

My installation practice is guided by a form of social protest through needlework. New genre, public needlework art, such as those practices described in this chapter, may be a suitable methodology to follow. Such artwork may be considered fraught in its references to the historical (Victorian) socialization of middle-class (settler) women, or, conversely, too closely aligned with performance and the body/intimate processes of the body to be taken seriously politically. Yet, interactive, interdisciplinary collaborations which involve public participants make for imaginative strategies by which to implement and maintain Robinson's edict.

Arthur Lockett

Patrick Mackin

Violet Mackin

Patrick Sills

Steven A. Kirby

James Keenan

Martin McGuigan

Robert McNally

Peter Leslie Woolmore

Richard Sykes

Karel Straub

Gerald Anthony Evans

Airey Neave

02:09:36

Martin Paul McConville

Anthony Dykes

Anthony Thornett

Christopher Shanley

Thomas Armstrong

Michael Cassidy

Noel Alexander Webb

Paul Moore Gray

Robert Lockhart

Richard Alan Baird

Agnes Jean Wallace

Paul Rodgers

Stephen Rumble

Endnotes

¹ Although some men were involved and two were state coordinators, 98% of the ribbon panels were made by women. This is documented in two surveys of *The Ribbon* project by sociologists Gabriella Miller and Carol Cockrell at Texas Woman's University, 1985-6 (Wilcox 1985:18; Pershing 329).

² Suzanne Lacy outlines 'new genre public art' in *Mapping the Terrain*, 1995, and Lucy Lippard evaluates the criteria and models of public art in her 1997 book, *The Lure of The Local: Senses of Place in a Multi-centred Society*, p. 24 and p. 286. Architect Miwon Kwon in 'For Hamburg: Public Art and Urban Identities', 2004, describes three paradigms of public art practice in the USA over the last thirty years: (a) art in public places (b) art as public spaces and (c) art in the public interest/'new genre public art'(1).

02:11:12

John Graham

William James Carson

Samuel Gibson

Fredrick John Lutton

Robert Maughan

Norman Prue

Andrew Webster

Jack McClenaghan

David Stanley Wray

George Thomas Surgeoner

David Alan Dunne

David Stinson

Stanley Hanna

Kevin Thompson

Alexander Gore

Joseph McKee

Peadar McElvenna

John Hannigan

Francis Barney Sullivan

John Henry Scott

Joseph James Porter

Alan John McMillan

Michael Kearney

Patrick O'Hanlon

Silvia Crowe

Jim Wright

Chapter 5

Narelle Jubelin: delicate *pétit point* materiality critiques national identity.

Introduction

My practice spans conceptual minimalism (including text-based art) in sculpture with embroidery. Fabric arts (the umbrella of art textiles, fiber art and/or needlework), until recently, were relegated to folk, outsider art and women’s decorative craft practices (Carlisle and Padovani qtd. by Hemmings 2005:32 - 3). The dominant cultural inscription labelled such work trivial. In the late 1960s and 70s second-wave feminism and installation-body art practices used textiles to valorise ‘the domestic,’ along with the overt sexual-revolution message ‘the personal is political.’ Pitted in apparent juxtaposition to this performative art movement, based on the West Coast of the U.S.A and in Europe, was New York-based conceptual minimalist public sculpture. Thirty years later, in the 1990s, the international art world became a very different, plural and hybrid place. Women, together with minorities and gays, had entered the art world in significant numbers and, while overt political critique was subsumed by finely-tuned aesthetic and tough intellectual strategies, the modifications to this rarefied world have been radical (Johnson 1990:1).

Australian Narelle Jubelin (b. 1960, currently based in Spain) is an artist whose work became aligned with the international art arena in the 1990s – a particularly defining moment when the High/Low divisions, had begun to dissolve. A 1990 Venice Biennale Aperto¹ representative, Narelle Jubelin’s body of work straddles minimalism and conceptualism in painting and *pétit point* needlework. Her work bears the hallmarks of an acute self-consciousness of context and exemplifies the inter-related concerns of intimacy/politics and public/private memory (Wood Conroy 1993:1) which I investigate in this thesis. Although Jubelin’s oeuvre is broader than these considerations², these concerns constitute the focus of my DCA creative project *The Irish Linen Memorial*.

James Joseph McCann

George Walsh

Paul Reece

Richard James Furminger

Derek Davidson

William Whitten

Eamon Ryan

William Arthur McGraw

Lord Louis Mountbatten

Nicholas Knatchbull

Paul Maxwell

Donald F. Blair

Nicholas J. Andrews

Gary I. Barnes

Raymond Dunn

Anthony G. Wood

Michael Woods

John C. Giles

Ian Albert Rogers

Walter Beard

Thomas R. Vance

Robert N. England

Jeffrey A. Jones

Leonard Jones

Robert D.V. Jones

Chris G. Ireland

02:12:48

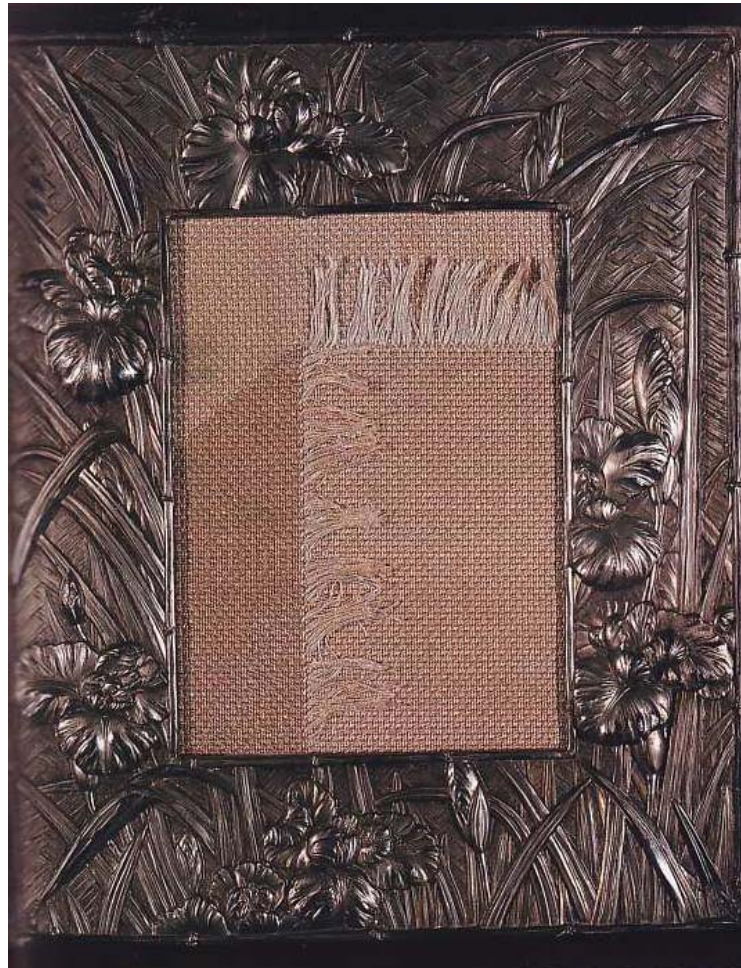


Figure 64: Pétit point *Rendition of Hand Hemmed Tiwi cloth*,
Irish linen, circa. 1974 (made at 'Tiwi Designs' (see image below)).
Museum of Contemporary Art, Sydney
Fabrics of Change: Trading Identities by Wood Conroy et al., p.25

Jubelin's exhibition record from 1990 – 2005 may be seen as representative of this shift. It demonstrates how the historic contribution of feminist concerns has been taken with renewed seriousness in the public cultural arena. Jubelin's work interrogates systems of exhibition practices and the circulation of cultural commodities. In the following case study, I primarily examine her work through her combined painting and petit point methodology which references historic associations with a woman's art practice, and the contributions of women, patriotic, subversive, rigorous and seductive, to the project of national history and the internationalism of the culture. Then these issues are related to the

02:14:24

Peter Fursman

Victor MacLeod

David Blair

Michael Hudson

Lady Patricia Brabourne

Patrick Hardy

Gerry Lennon

Henry Corbett

Hugh O'Halloran

Gabriel Wiggins

George Foster

Edward Jones

Sarah Ann Larmour

Martin Rowland

Robert George Hawthorne

Mark Anthony McGrann

Paul A. Wright

John Donaldson

Herbert Kernaghan

Anthony McClelland

James Robinson

John McGuinness

Walter Moore

David Bellamy

Frederick Irwin

Thomas Gilhooley

construction of my *Irish Linen Memorial* and how Jubelin’s practice has influenced mine.

Jubelin as Painter

In the early 1990s, the historically positioned binary-opposition between the decorative arts or crafts, – together with folk or Indigenous art (often traded and circulated as commodities) – versus that of architecture and western-based conceptual art as it influenced sculpture and painting – were still firmly in place. The hybrid inter-relationship between craft or needlework/everyday domestic rituals and the high art disciplines, such as tapestry and sculpture, were only beginning to be theorised by feminist artists and art historians, like Wood Conroy, Jones, Jefferies, and Rowley. Changes in scale and conceptual underpinnings played a marked role in how artwork from these different fields was viewed, critiqued and, therefore, how it would circulate.

The mid-1990s, with collapse of the ‘commodity’ argument, and increased familiarity with aspects of the discipline of textiles and its various textual language(s), mark a different era (Sharrad, Jones 2000, and Collett, Jones, Sharrad, Wood Conroy 2004). New theoretical approaches allow textiles and sculptural assemblage to be read as text. Indeed, conceptually-based sculpture or painting, since the 1960s, included text or explanatory conceptual notes to accompany an art piece or an installation. Objects, together with the space-in-between the objects are considered ‘dialogue’ (Wood Conroy 1993: 24 – 27).



Figure 65: Bathurst Island, ‘Tiwi Designs’ artists and seamstresses,
Photo: D Conroy 1974

David Teeney

Marius O’Neill

Paul McCrory

Edward McMaster

Kenneth Stratton

Paul Fryer

John Gerald Davidson

Gerry Melville

David White

William Wright

William Beck

Keith Charles Ritchards

Alan David Ayrton

02:16:00

Simon Evans

James Fowler

Peter S. Grundy

William Wilson

Stanley Hazelton

Sean Martin Cairns

1980

Doreen McGuinness

Simon Bates

Gerald Hardy

Samuel F. Lundy

Alexander Reid

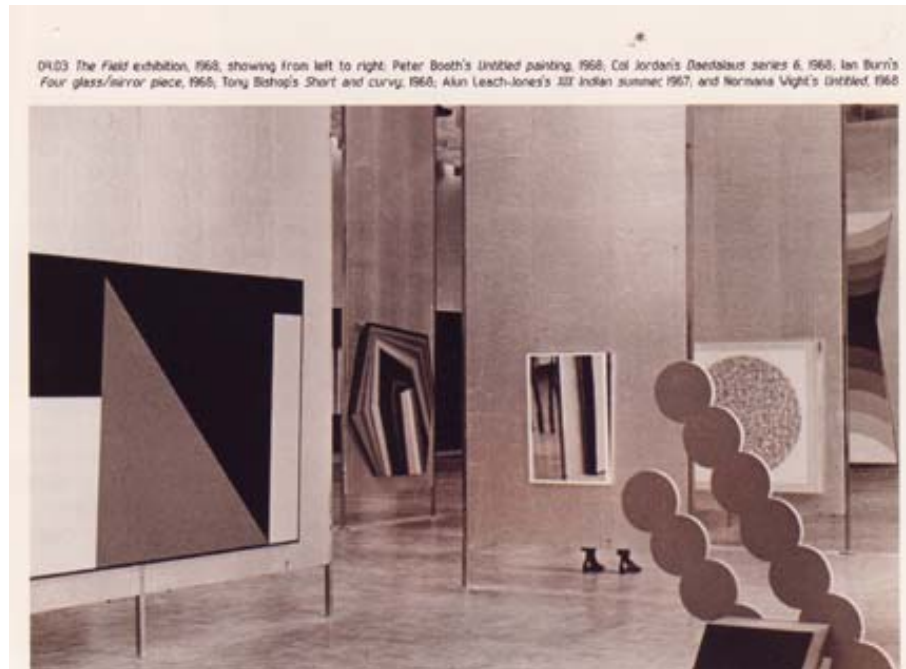


Figure 66: *The Field*, National Gallery of Victoria, 1968

Ann Stephen, 'The Conundrum of A Mirror Piece: On Being able to Look at Ourselves Seeing', *Fieldwork: Australian Art 1968 – 2002* (curators Jason Smith and Charles Green), National Gallery of Victoria, Melbourne, 2002.

02:17:36

A seminal Australian exhibition of conceptual New York-style painting, *The Field*, opened at the (then new) National Gallery of Victoria, in August 1968. This show institutionalised this style of artmaking for the next two decades. In the following scenario, published in 2002, theorist Ann Stephen documents Australian conceptual painter-sculptor, Ian Burn, who described how his painting, which explored phenomenological constructs, existed only in a system. Burn had conceived of a descriptive "wall text" alongside his now-infamous 1968 mirror works, *Two glass/mirror piece* and *Four glass/mirror piece* (Stephen 2002:026). In correspondence with the curator, Burn stated:

Unlike most works, one can look at the mirror pieces for hours without ever gaining any indication of what it is about...The idea is not available visibly in the work it only exists in a system (Burn in conversation with John Stringer 1968 qtd in Stephen 2002:026).

Robert J. Crilly

Robert Smith

James Cochrane

Richard Samuel J. Wilson

David Purse

Thomas Montgomery

John Brown

Mark Cochrane

Abayonni Max Olorenda

Kevin Delaney

Graham Frank Cox

Anne Maguire

Errol Pryce

William McAteer

Alexander Abercrombie

Leonard Kaitcer

Hugh Maguire

Winston Howe

Joseph Rose

John Morrow

Mark Coe

Brendan McLoughlin

Henry Livingstone

John Bateman

Elsie Clare

Sean G. Walker

As well, one of the premises of Stephen's contemporary article was to document the 'necessity for language in art' as it emerged after the late-modernist period of the 1960s (ibid.: 026). Significantly, Burn was a painter "deeply suspicious of the visual" (ibid.: 026) and this also relates to one of my subsequent points about tapestry/needlework.

Narelle Jubelin's practice emerged from the central role of painting in the conceptual art movement in Australia. Yet, even in 2002, Jubelin must counteract her identity³ as a *pétit point* artist, read: low-brow, tiny, female, needlepoint artist, with her achievements as a large-scale painter, read: male/high art who "mobilises" "rigorous" political issues (see Harper 212-217). Jubelin is based equally across the painting-*pétit point* divide in her conceptual and formal inquiries. The common link between the two disciplines is in her use of systems or series, like Ian Burn. Jubelin immerses herself in scholarly research, acknowledges site-context and is self-conscious about her role in exhibition schemes. Such interests are emblematic of the intellectual concerns put into practice by many tertiary-educated contemporary artists of all persuasions, myself included.

Jubelin's *Double Sided Wall Painting* (3965 X 9502mm X 3965 X 128mm), 2002, is part of an installation, *Soft Shoulder*. The painting is a reproduced geometric textile design by architect Marion Mahony Griffins⁴ in flat acrylic. This piece was presented in Australia as part of the *On Writing. Writing On 1994 – 2002* exhibition of her work, at the John Curtin Gallery in Perth and subsequently delivered in the form of a lecture-video at the University of Wollongong. A photographic 'essay' of the work is published in the post conference proceedings, *Reinventing Textiles: Postcolonialism and Creativity*, Vol. 3 (ed.s Sharrad and Collett, 2004). Jubelin's 'essay' consists of images plus two obtuse footnotes where she refers obliquely to her research. The first footnote is about folds and ambivalences, through a post-structuralist reading of James Joyce by Stephen Heath, 1984. The second is about space and time, read through Elizabeth Grosz's feminist philosophical tract, *Architecture from the Outside: Essays on Virtual and Real Space*, MIT Press, 2001. Jubelin thus situated her practice through a video 'aide memoire' of the historic and contemporary

02:19:12

Paul Moan

Robert Carr

Carl McPharland

Bernard Montgomery

William Stephen Magill

Frederick Wilson

William David Livingstone

Victor Morrow

Mary Doherty

George Kerr

Michael Madden

Herbert R. Westmacott

John Harman

Anthony Shields

Roy Hamilton

John Francis Turnly

Richard Latimer

Michael Wright

Miriam Daly

William George Elliott

Terence O'Neill

John Morley

Henry Byrne

Christopher Watson

Michael McCartan

Robert Thompson

role which painting and architecture has played in her oeuvre. Veiled links were created between her interests in conceptual painting, time-based installation practice, a provocative literary reference to Joyce, and the use of a theatrical ‘aside’ valorising Griffin. Griffin’s textile design imagery was enlarged to gargantuan and lengthy proportions, made clear in the large scale of the wall and the number of painters who laboured to create numerous layers, rolled on in a geometric grid with acrylic house-paint. This sequence was recorded in a ten minute video of the event-artefact, subsequently edited by a production crew of three.

Jubelin’s work in this genre is similar to my own as I was trained in large-scale sculptural installation work, aligned with architecture. I often consult with architects, as well as journeyman carpenters, professional engineers or project managers in planning and implementing my artwork, which has been primarily sited outdoors. *The Irish Linen Memorial* does not require the kind of technical expertise that has been necessary for other artworks in my practice, yet with each site-contextual installation, I review positioning and place. Often, I make changes to the immediate surroundings or site in preparation for the installation, in order to alter the viewing of the memorial and the kinaesthetic experience for the visitor-viewer. Such devices have included situating *The ILM* atop a long flight of stairs to a foyer where I blacked-out the skylight above the hanging handkerchiefs with a heavy fabric. At the site of another installation the full height of a corridor was used and translucent fabric was positioned over doorways, where light poured through, along the length of the hall. In my final installation, in the Faculty Gallery at the University of Wollongong, I reconstructed the space so that it was inverted upon entering it. This was achieved by frustrating the viewer with placing a blank wall, constructed of panel walls, directly in front of the gallery entrance, which forced a viewer to move along a narrow corridor beyond which then opened to the commemorative space. An additional narrow and dimly-lit corridor was the only way to exit the space. The secretive quality to the reconfigured gallery space added to a quieter, reflective arena in which to honour the dead.

02:20:48

William J. Clarke
James McCarron
Michael Donnelly
Brian M. Brown
James Bell
William Younger
Letitia Younger
Colette Meek
Rodney Patrick McCormick
Frank McGrory
Wallace Allen
Ross Hearst
Ernest Johnston
Robin Shields
James Hewitt
Seamus Quaid
Ronnie Bunting
Noel Lyttle
Owen McQuade
Oliver Walsh
Peter Valente
Thomas Orr
Norman Donaldson
John James Dundas
Colin Quinn
Heather Joan Pollock

Jubelin as Needleworker: 'From Mere to Middle'

Narelle Jubelin exemplifies the current generation of the broadly aware textile artist, whose work is underpinned by a reading of context and text, or scholarly theories. In a series in *Object* magazine in the early 1990s, artist-scholar Diana Wood Conroy, specifically situated conceptual artwork and site-context within discipline of craft⁵. From the mid-1990s onwards, the textiles field has been re-read by post-colonial literary theory incorporating issues of historic trade, ethnic and national identity and the body. This revisioning was a particularly intriguing balancing act in Australia, after celebrating its Bicentenary of British colonisation in 1988. It was a time when issues of national identity questioned margin/centre and where the very founding of the Australian nation met reinvigorated critical dialogue. Artists and theorists from anthropology and archaeology, both Indigenous and non-Indigenous, re-interrogated the fabric arts arena, signalling the depth of cross-disciplinary languages between textiles-text. Since the mid-1980s cultural anthropologists have commented on 'the social life of things' (see Appadurai; Tilley) and folklore theorists, informed by feminism, have reiterated how cultural identity is inscribed in the ways people interact with objects (Bronner, 1983, 1986; Jones 1980; Sherzer and Sherzer, 1976; Pershing 1985 & 1997).

It was Jubelin's unusual choice of the minute form of needlework, *pétit point*, to devalorise monumentality and heroism that captured the attention of the Sydney art world from 1986 to 89. *Pétit point* is "a technique of tiny, opposed stitches so fine it is almost magical" (Wood Conroy 1993: 23). *Pétit point* dates from the sixteenth century, and found a fashionable audience in the nineteenth century among upper class women with leisure time (www.needlepoint.com/cs/miniature/index_2.htm qtd. in Harper 217). The miniscule diagonal stitches on canvas, typically of cotton, silk or split wool, are invisible to the eye which, unexpectedly, negates the incredibly laborious and painstaking needlework process. Jubelin then pays further attention to presentation – choosing individual, 'culturally inquisitive' frames for each item. When Jubelin developed and fabricated her radical acts of juxtapositioning, variously entitled *Hi(s)story: A Small*

Hugh McGinn

William Burns

William Stevenson

1981

Lindsay G. McDougall

Ivan Toombs

Maurice Gilvarry

Christopher Shenton

Sir Norman Stronge

James Stronge

Philip Barker

Charles W. Lewis

Alexander Scott

David Samuel Montgomery

Patrick Gerard Trainor

James Burns

Gerry Roland

Patrick Liam McNally

John Smith

Paul Blake

Kenneth J. Acheson

Joanne Mathers

Jack Donnelly

James Gary English

James William Brown

02:22:24

Reminder, The Crossing, 1987, Second Glance (At 'The Coming Man') Australia, 1988-89 – finely crafted petit points of historic monuments, heroes or momentous events (pioneers, early settlement photographs, or mythic personages), Jubelin was also making clever, critical political commentary about nation. This shrewd artistic strategy gained her invitation to exhibit at the Aperto pavilion at the Venice Biennale 1990.

In the early 1990s the use of needlework in High Art circles constituted a significant subversion and heresy. Practitioner-researchers have been the better informed commentators on this movement in the art world over the past fifteen years. Such persons include literary theorist and amateur embroiderer/knitter, Dorothy Jones; European-trained traditional Gobelin⁶ tapestry weavers, Diana Wood Conroy and Kay Lawrence of Australia; Janis Jefferies of Great Britain, other weavers in Poland/Eastern Europe, together with Ruth Scheuing and Barbara Layne in Canada. These artists-theorists combined their technical knowledge of tapestry weaving with theoretical positioning from post-structural feminism and post-colonialism, grounded by their personal journeys of politicization as female artists⁷. At conferences and exhibitions facilitated by the post-1976 increased frequency of air travel and post-1996 high-speed internet communication/email revolution, these scholar-artists began a deeper intellectual dialogue which produced a revised central platform for their voices.

With tapestry weaving as their base, these practitioners were attentively cognizant and alert to the seemingly unusual and vociferous emergence of textiles⁸ as 'sign' in contemporary art in the 1990s and the new millennium⁹. The artists were grounded in an awareness of the unprejudiced prestigious cultural role that tapestry once held (unlike the history of textiles, aligned with domesticity and women – see Parker 1984), especially in Europe¹⁰. Tapestry weaving and display had been a central transmitter of personal or state power, and the same medium held long historical associations with subversive critical comment, including the inhabitation of the grotesque (Wood Conroy 1994:3 and 13). These artists reinvigorated socio-political critique and made new conceptual and

02:24:00

John Robinson
William James Stockman
Paul Whitters
Gary Martin
Richard W. J. McKee
Bobby Sands
Philip C. Ellis
Desmond Guiney
James Power
Francis Hughes
Emmanuel M. McLarnon
Julie Livingstone
Eric Guiney
Samuel Vallely
Patrick Martin
John King
Paul Bulman
Andrew Gavin
Michael E. Bagshaw
Grenville Winstone
Raymond McCreesh
Patsy O'Hara
Henry Duffy
Carol Ann Kelly
Joseph Lynch
Allan Ritchie

feminist connections through a wide range of the fibre arts¹¹. Fabric arts metaphors, particularly knitting and quilting abounded in political literature and weaver-theorists collaborated with colleagues from the discipline of literature (Collett, Jones, Sharrad). The new ideas that circulated under the umbrella of fabrics/textiles, were about:

1980s: the private, including ‘semiotic textiles’ and ‘hairy monsters’, and public narrative tapestry (Wood Conroy 1995);

1990s: colonialism, the global trade of objects, migration/displacement, identity/the body, Indigenous/non-Indigenous relations (For example, the 2001-4 Australian projects entitled, *Fabric(ation)s of the Postcolonial* and *Fabrics of Change: Trading Identities*);

Late 1990s: metaphors about interconnectedness in an emerging online (yet depersonalised) world; the rapidity of lifestyle in an age of high technology versus time-consuming processes and more personal labour; and

Current: digital communication systems, including new virtual ‘haptic’ tactile technologies and developments in intelligent polymer materials.

With such fresh underpinnings, textiles have moved from ‘mere’ to middle in recent years. Textiles have been shown to have a more recognizable agenda and irreplaceable applicability. During the same period, the false dichotomies of High and Low art were equalised, just as the distinct gender-based connotations of public/private have begun to dissolve, underpinned by feminist scholarship in sociology, philosophy and history (Rowley, Smith, Butler, Scott among others).

Texts from the edge: tapestry and identity in Australia co-curated by Marie Cook, Kay Lawrence and Diana Wood Conroy, 1993, illustrates that movement (or edge) from ‘mere’ to middle. In this exhibition, artists worked within the high art of Gobelin strict weaving technique and the traditional tapestry content-imagery of symbolic claims to political power. This historic content was juxtaposed with the subversion of histories,

Mervyn Robinson

Charles Maguire

George McBrearty

Michael O’Neill

Colin Dunlop

Joseph Lynn

Thomas Ronald Graham

Christopher Kyle

Neal Quinn

Vincent Robinson

Danny McIlhone

Joe McDonnell

John Dempsey

Nora McCabe

Daniel Barrett

Hugh O’Neill

George Joseph Hall

Martin Hurson

Robert Campbell

Gavin Dean

John Hazlett

Peter Doherty

Thomas Harpur

Kevin Lynch

John Smyth

Andrew Alfred Woods

02:25:36

autobiographical journeys and/or intimately observed landscapes. The combination articulates an edge, where the woven symbols of “the private imagination comes to stand for the wider sphere of national identity” (1993:4). Kay Lawrence’s weaving illustrates this decade long trajectory in which feminist weavers reinvigorated the ancient public art of tapestry with personal women’s issues to assert their claim to the public arena and refuse their erasure as meaningful:

In a series of memorable works over ten years Kay Lawrence’s tapestry has moved through a graphic outwardness in exploring images of national identity, as in her design for the monumental embroidery in Parliament House, Canberra in 1988, to private realms of subjectivity. A woman may identify herself with her house, (tapestry *House, self*) or as in this work, the mother has become the house for the child... (Wood Conroy 1994:13).

In the same period, yet in a very different and quiet way, Narelle Jubelin’s work has a similar resonance to Lawrence. Not in Gobelin tapestry, but in an equivalent ancient art and skilled narrative form, *pétit point*, Jubelin reinscribes contemporary meanings and associations. What Conroy, Jefferies and Lawrence position in more direct narrative form, Jubelin delicately couches in the genre of a Duchampian intellectual guessing game or detective novel (Engberg 11;20;23). Yet, whatever the method of transcription, one of the messages is that women’s participation in the public life of the state is still grotesquely fearful and unnameable. As Sidonie Smith states, “The [female] body categorised as abnormal becomes associated with those forces threatening the stability of the body politic.” (Smith 1993:130). Jubelin’s feminist voice critiques women’s absence from the national social body through her choice of imagery, her descriptive titles, her careful consideration of frames, positioning of the assemblages, and the parameters of the installation space.

Jubelin creates a spatial dialogue between the dis-separate, framed miniature embroideries garnered from photographs or objects she researches. In Jubelin’s 1992 exhibit, *Dead Slow*, her small framed *pétit*

02:27:12

Kieran Doherty
Thomas McElwee
Liam Arthur Canning
Peter McGuinness
Charles Johnston
Charles Armstrong
Michael Devine
Sohan Singh Virdee
Mark Evans
Stuart John Montgomery
Alan Clarke
John Proctor
Eugene Mulholland
George A. Stewart
David Smyth
Anthony Braniff
Alexander Beck
Mark A. Stockman
Hector Raymond Hall
Lawrence Kennedy
Nora Field
Robert Ewing
John Patrick Breslin
Mary McKay
Billy McCullough
Stephen Hamilton

points were dwarfed by the large open gallery space which she mediated with a built stucco-rendered wall. *Dead Slow* refers to the last category before the command of ‘Stop’ on the great ocean trading liners. One company, such as the P & O, would pause in Australia’s harbour, Sydney, en route to India, Scotland and Japan (Wood Conroy 1993: 26). Jubelin positioned sculptural objects and curiosities, such as an un-attributed Indigenous mask for the tourist market, alongside the *pétit points* and descriptive texts detailing the linen embroidery processes from *The Volume of Encyclopedia of Needlework* c. 1900. The exhibit included a May Day photograph, c. 1937, two ‘fin-de siecle’ wood-chip chairs and seven nineteenth century *Gujarat* hand-cut wooden printing blocks. The *pétit point* renditions were: *The Call of the Homeland*, a collection of English Verse reinterpreted as ‘on design no. 1147, c. 1909 for pressed steel sheets in a stonework pattern, aluminium strip frame’ and a replica of a map of Australia with the World War II patriotic women’s motto “Our Bit” (Stephen 1992:16). In preparation for this exhibition, Jubelin consulted Wood Conroy¹² and created two artworks based on their dialogue.

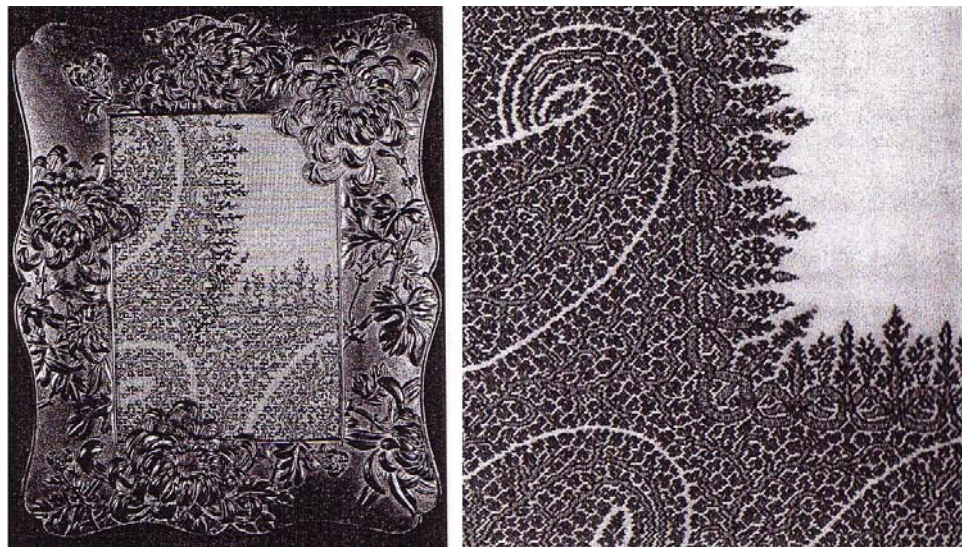


Figure 67: framed *Pétit Point* on linen (above)
Rendition of Woven Cloth: Paisley Shawl, circa. 1870.(below)

The items included the corner *Rendition of Woven Cloth: Paisley Shawl* circa 1870s and the corner *Rendition of a Hand-Hemmed Tiwi Cloth - Irish Linen* circa 1974. Jubelin framed both in rather weighty nineteenth century

Julian Patrick Connolly

Kenneth Howarth

Edward Patrick Brogan

Arthur James Bettice

Trevor Foster

Charles Neville

Cecil Graham

Rev Robert Bradford

Kenneth Campbell

Thomas McNulty

Peadar Fagan

Silas Lyttle

Albert Beacom

James McClintock

John McKeegan

Stephen Murphy

William Coulter

Sean Murphy

1982

Samuel Pollock

Patrick Reynolds

Stephen Carleton

Deborah Ann Rowe

John Torbett

Robert Mitchell

02:28:48

Japanese metal frames. The entire result constituted a careful and systematic management of all the elements, which needed to be read/viewed as a whole to be fully comprehended and appreciated. *Dead Slow* was exhibited on two continents in 1992, at The Centre of Contemporary Art in Glasgow, Scotland and at the Sydney Biennale in Australia. As well as being a serious needleworker of the minutest scale, Narelle Jubelin is a gracefully skilled practitioner of spatial arrangements which assist, and perhaps frustrate, her viewers in making conceptual links about both tragic and positive aspects of colonialist legacies.

Details of Jubelin’s installation, the *pétit point* creations from the *Dead Slow*, were exhibited again in 2004 in a travelling group show, *Fabrics of Change: Trading Identities*, in Australia. This time the context comprised of highly prized actual historic artefacts from the Macleay Museum and The Australian Museum, The South Australian and the National Archives of Canada, among others. The juxtapositions created different and updated postcolonial associations. The proximity of the other objects-artefacts, together with literary commentary, provided a reinvigorated post-millennium framework and discourse. About the art exhibition, *Fabrics of Change: Trading Identities*, political-literary theorist Paul Sharrad stated that Jubelin:

[H]ighlights the reverberations that the immense journeys of empire had on private lives and intimate objects. The focussed intensity of the embroidery process mirrors her close scrutiny of the systems of trade and its hierarchies (2004:24).

The beading practice used by Myre is a traditional Iroquois nation art form with lengths of stringed wampum (porcupine quill, shell bead or glass bead with sinew). It is a form of political treaty, later made into the form of a belt. Myre’s work is in acrylic bead and imitation sinew, and rests within aluminium frames.

Anne Collett describes Myre’s work as referring directly to “remembrance of the contractual agreement between nations” and “the stilled moment of disjuncture and rupture felt ‘on contact’ [between European settlers in Canada and Indigenous peoples]. It is a sculpted history of Red/White relations, a portrait of divided and damaged national community, and a poignant self-portrait of the suffering of the children of mixed descent” (Collett 2004: 50 – 51).

People have become familiar with Indigenous beading from North America through the tourist trade of beaded and embroidered moccasins.

Figure 68: Information about Nadia Myre and Wampum

- Robert Mitchell
Anthony Harker
John Dunlop McKeague
Martin Kyles
Seamus Morgan
Norman Hanna
Alan McCrum
Anthony Rapley
Nicholas Malakos
Daniel Holland
Stephen Boyd
Norman Duddy
Michael Ward
Michael Burbridge
Patrick Scott
David Brown
William John Morrison
Stephen McConomy
Wilbert Kennedy
Noel McCulloch
Raymond Devlin
Leslie Hamilton
Colin Clifford
Alan Caskey
Maureen McCann
Francis Toner

02:30:24

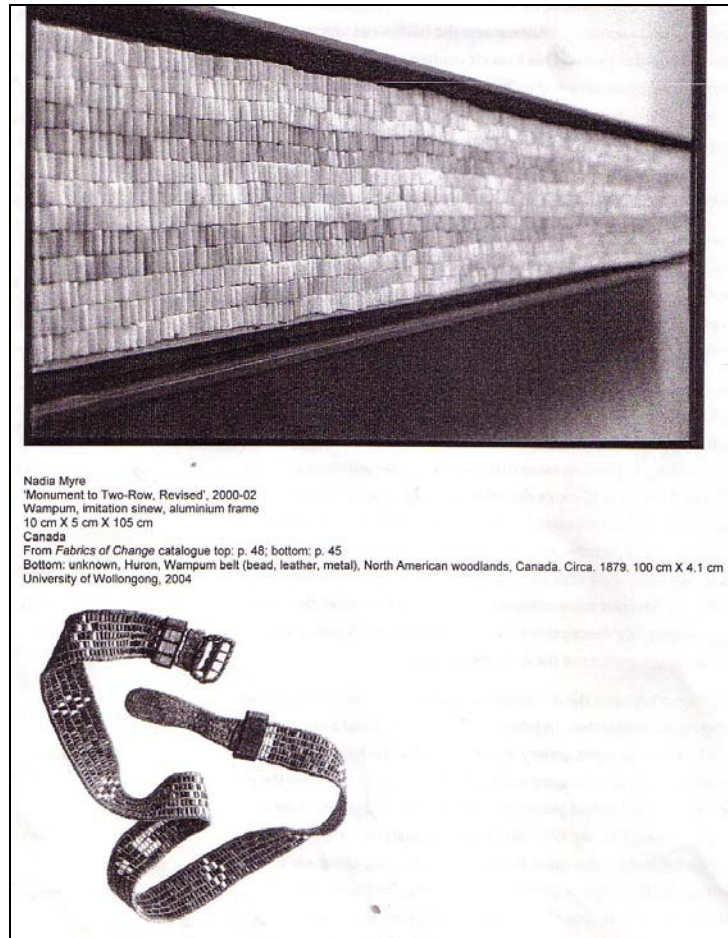


Figure 69: Nadia Myre, *Monument to Two-Row, Revised*, 2000-02.
 unknown, Huron, Canada, Wampum belt, circa. 1879 (bottom).
Fabrics of Change: Trading Identities by Wood Conroy et al. p.45 & 48.

Emerging Canadian artist, Nadia Myre, of First Nations, Algonkin and French-Canadian heritage also exhibited two works. Entitled *Monument to Two-Row, Revised* and *Indian Act*, Myre's work, like Jubelin's, is based in both large-scale conceptual painting as well as in a diminutive, minute practice of beading, (a needlework artform with traditional origins).

I am interested in the keen attention Jubelin brings to the placement, hanging or installation of her artwork, as well as her small-scale embroidery/needlework practice which garners an empathetic

Thomas Cunningham

Anthony Anderson

Patrick Smith

James Flynn

David Reeves

Hugh Cummings

Albert White

Colm Carey

Norman Maxwell

Anthony Daly

Simon Tipper

Vernon Young

Graham Barker

John Heritage

Robert Livingstone

George Measure

John McKnight

Keith John Powell

Laurence Smith

Raymond Bright

Eamonn Bradley

Francis McCluskey

Wilfred McIlveen

James Galway

Brian Smyth

Stephen Bennett

02:32:00

response from a gallery viewer. The viewer is also implicated in the reading of the work. Such a proposition may entice a reader-viewer into an engagement with loss, guilt or the trauma endured by others in a settler society. In a divisive settler society such as Northern Ireland. It is crucial that an artist be sensitive in presenting politically delicate issues and still achieve an engaged readership/audience. Therefore, Jubelin's work practice has informed my own oeuvre, albeit my artwork is about another place, Northern Ireland, a country also on the periphery.

Jubelin and Touch

How Jubelin engages persons through her work is through its tactility, together with certain phenomenological strategies inherent in conceptual minimalist painting. Many theorists, such as Alison Ferris and Susan Stewart USA, Sue Rowley, Australia, and Janis Jefferies, Britain, report how the sense of intimate touch, connected with the body, is crucial to textiles theorising, such as in the statement, "Memories are material in that the body carries them somatically" (Stewart 17 – 18). Rowley states:

An object that references or invites physical handling or touch constitutes a particular way of knowing, which...has intrinsic to it an articulation of a deeper, underlying critique of Enlightenment assumptions about knowledge, truth and rationality (Rowley 182 qtd. in Ferris 42).

The needlework process is literally incomprehensible to the visual sense and difficult for the conceptual mind to consider without grasping other kinetic knowledge. This is why an artist may use an exhibition strategy of displaying the 'how-to' dynamics of the hand-crafting¹³ process itself. Jubelin applies the intricate technique of *pétit point* to an image of a reproduced photograph or artefact for her chosen subject matter¹⁴. The painstakingly slow action of the hand, in order to reproduce the photograph or artefact, therefore, reproduces a reproduction. Although outside the concerns of this exegesis, this curious fact intersects with current research based in performative practice and memory studies theory¹⁵ (see Phelan 2003).

02:33:36

Kevin Valliday
Martin Jessop
Kevin Waller
William Nixon
Leon Bushe
Ronald Brennan
John Gerard O'Neill
John Eagleson
Charles Carruthers
Frederick Williamson
Elizabeth Chambers
Eamon Quinn
Karen McKeown
Thomas Cochrane
Joseph Donegan
Peter Corrigan
Sean Quinn
Alan McCloy
Paul Hamilton
Garry Ewing
Helen Woodhouse
Charles Spence
Sean Burns
Eugene Toman
Gervaise McKerr
Patrick Murphy

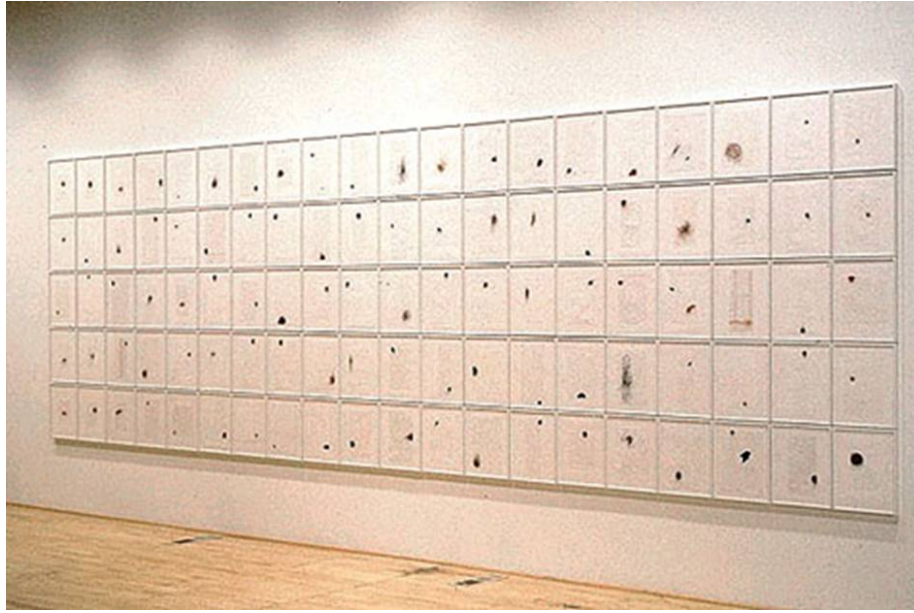


Figure 70: 'Chronicle of Days', Sewn hair on napkins, artist: Anne Wilson.

The delicate materiality of Chicago-based needlework artist, Anne Wilson, mirrors Jubelin's practice in *pétit point* as Wilson sews with hair:

In other words, touch, or even the invitation to touch, is iconoclastic because it is the symbolic act that can breach the carefully constructed gap between the object (the physical) and the mind (Ferris *ibid.*).

Nineteenth century political theorist, Karl Marx, brought attention to the importance of the five senses, the economics of labour, the history of human accomplishment and the senses as storehouses of 'material memories' (Marx 1844 qtd. in Ferris 39). The laborious, time-consuming aspect of needlework, such as *pétit point*, or sewing with hair, reads an aspect of time, remembrance and repeated references of hand-to-body because of the infinitesimal, repetitive stitches, worked with an almost invisibly fine thread, of the needle-artwork.

It is vital to the reading of a textiles art object that there is an awareness of personal bodily memory or a perceived knowledge (empathetic reading) of the time spent in the crafting process, which makes up the whole. Wood Conroy speaks about Jubelin's work in terms of felt

02:35:12

Lenny Murphy

Ronny Irwin

Snowden Corkey

Michael Fay

Michael Tighe

John Martin

James Gibson

Ruth Dixon

Alan Glen Callaghan

Valerie Anne McIntyre

Clare Elizabeth Watt

Stephen Smith

Philip McDonough

Stephen Bagshaw

Clinton J. Collins

David Murray

David W. Stitt

Shaw Williamson

Neil Williams

Terence Adams

Paul Joseph Delaney

David Salthouse

Angela Maria Hoole

Seamus Grew

Roderick Carroll

Patricia Cooke

words such as intense, poignant, intricate, acute, piquant, passionate and ‘intimately unsettling’ (1993:24-27). Jubelin’s strategy of an arresting “eye-wateringly detailed” technical craft, *pétit point* (Harper 217), when combined with tactical oeuvres which are spatial and strategically systematic – offer deeply reflective comment on the circulation of the everyday in global terms from the colonial period to the post-colonial.

Conclusion

Jubelin’s longevity in an international conceptual art world has been her unusual “mobilization” of textiles in socio-political critiques of culture and cultural consumption (Harper 2003:215; 217). However, as Linda Pershing illuminated in her 1999 research on embroidery and public realm, the serious reception of a needlework/politics intersection, remains ambiguous. British critic, Catherine Harper, in documenting Jubelin’s personal artistic narrative, exemplifies the strength of Jubelin’s lingering anxiety with the binary opposition of the historically-gendered connotations behind *petit point*, and the male privileged position of a painting practice:

[U]nnecessarily embroiled in the specifics of well-versed arguments...perhaps she dwells on the dilemma of deeming “skilled stitcher” and “high art practitioner” to be mutually exclusive terms (Harper 2003:213).

Writing in 2000, Sharrad, literary critic, has been at the forefront of re-positioning how textiles, cloth and their crafting are read, including as socio-political documents and signifiers:

While culture itself can now be taken as a text open to readings, the objects that circulate within and help produce culture, though they carry complex sets of meanings, often seem to embody something different from and resistant to linguistic/written text and textual practices.

This, of course, is in part, an illusion. Given the linguistic origins of “text” in notions of weaving, cloth and fabric arts

Austin Smith

Patrick Pearce Elliott

1983

Eric Brown

Brian Quinn

Tommy Edgar

William Doyle

John Olphert

Francis Joseph McColgan

Neil Liam McMonagle

Allan Price

William Edward Magill

William Gordon Wilson

Cecil McNeill

Lindsay McCormack

James Jackson Hogg

Eamon Kerr

Frederick Morton

William James Miller

John McConville

James McCormick

Gerald Thomas Jeffrey

Richard Biddle

Trevor Elliott

Paddy Barkey

02:36:48

supply a test case for the overlap and separateness of material and textual cultures. From Ancient Greece and India alike, perpetuated into metaphors of modern nationhood (spinning a yarn, the social fabric, etcetera), metaphors of textiles and texts persist to the point of cliché.

[C]loth provides us with a way of looking again at literary texts and seeing through these texts to social, historical and economic conditions. These elements lie behind commonly debated abstract themes such as “postcoloniality” or “national identity” and shape the ways in which we are able to discuss such issues (2).

In 2005, the art world climate has become accustomed to the subversive and heretical methodologies inherent in the use of needlework, textiles metaphors and/or tapestry weaving strategies,¹⁶ as opposed to when Jubelin began exhibiting in the international art arena in 1990. Harper further reflects on Jubelin’s work as feminine, having a compelling affective value and in being conveniently portable (2003:212-213 & 217). Jubelin remains within an historically female textiles tradition whereby she engages a seemingly inoffensive artistic process to make highly politicised statements about nationhood or, in her more recent work, feminist statements which are unabashedly seductive. The difference in 2005, as opposed to a needleworker practising a hundred years ago, is that Jubelin’s career sits squarely atop the advantage of the achievement of one hundred years of feminist activism and theoretical developments. Therefore, her powerful creative statements are analysed seriously, circulate internationally and are made thoroughly public. Jubelin is a part of her own history-in-the-making. As such, the international acceptance, since the early 1990s, of Jubelin’s needlework-based oeuvre marks a shift from crafted textiles as ‘fraught territory’ (for easily-understood consideration in the greater art-world) to simply another text-based conceptual strategy, albeit with specifically feminine/feminist connotations. Yet, her acute self-consciousness of her newly-acquired position, (Harper 2003:213;216)), is a reminder of the trying times that her

02:38:24

Mervyn McEwan

David Galway

Eric Dale

Alice Purvis

Gerry Cathcart

Colin Carson

Trevor Close

Andrew Stinson

Geoffrey Mark Curtis

Malvin Moffitt

Oswell Neely

Thomas Herron

Ronald Alexander

John Roxborough

Patrick Mackin

Eamonn McMahon

John Anthony O’Hare

Martin Malone

Mark Kinghan

Thomas Reilly

Brendan Convery

James Mullan

Ronnie Finlay

William Young

John Wasson

Lily McCollum

balancing act, between painting and petit, point has required in her twenty-year career, and the still-fragile parallel developments in feminist and hybrid art practices. My *Irish Linen Memorial* relies on the broad readership that Jubelin has garnered for interdisciplinary art, even whilst the fit of ‘mere’ textiles to painting or sculpture, as ‘the centre’, remains teasingly ambiguous.

Endnotes

¹ The Aperto section contains international surveys, as opposed to regional particularities (such as The Australian Pavilion).

² Examples of developments in her work since 1997 are: a bleached printed fabric curtain in collaboration with The Fabric Workshop and Museum, Philadelphia, USA, referencing the protagonist ‘Penelope’ in James Joyce’s *Ulysses*; research into the writer-diarist An  is Nin, the shamed USA novelist, William Issac Thomas, or the contributions to the International Style in Architecture by interior designer, Lilly Reich, or architect Marion Mahony Griffins’ *The Magic of America*.

³ Narelle Jubelin’s personal narrative is based on her original training as a formalist painter. “She is sensitive to the cultural impulses that frame the “fussy stuff” – the “little labours of crafty making” – as “lower” than conceptual, cool, considered canvas and its contents” (Harper 2003: 213; 216). In the footnotes to Harper’s article, she states that Jubelin went out of her way to indicate, several times, that her work circulates in systems of art (rather than craft) production – public spaces, commercial art galleries.

The stigma of ‘second-class’ or ‘of marginal importance’ lingers in associations with the label of ‘textile artist’ over, for example, ‘an installation artist/sculptor/painter’ and this has implications for one’s mainstream avant-garde or international arts career. International interdisciplinary conferences, such as *The Space Between*, Curtin University of Technology, 2002, are changing this limited perception.

Narelle Jubelin’s position, while respectful of the tradition of needlework and women’s various contributions to history in her work, is not overtly feminist.

⁴ This is specifically a textile design used for a patterned fireplace in the 1913 Blyth House, Iowa, USA. Marion Mahony Griffins was the partner-collaborator of Walter Burley Griffins whose contribution to modernist, utopian architecture in the USA, India and Australia is well-documented. Specifically, Marion Mahony Griffins influenced Frank Lloyd Wright’s Oak Park Illinois studio design through her four volume book, *The Magic of America*.

⁵ The following articles constitute Diana Wood Conroy’s series in *Object: ‘Tapestry: Signs and History’*, Spring 1992; ‘Outside Looking in: Textiles and Marginality’, Autumn 1992, ‘Intimacy and Politics’ which included a section on Narelle Jubelin, in Autumn 1993 and ‘Solvig Baas Becking: a Sense of Infinite Order’ March 1994.

⁶ Strict Gobelin flat woven technique is woven in discontinuing wefts that build up blocks of the design between the selvages of the weaving. Lengthy apprenticeships are required to learn tapestry. Before 1976 with the establishment of the Victorian Tapestry Workshop, Australian weavers found training in the United Kingdom or Europe. (Wood Conroy 1994:2)

⁷ Although not comparable to the higher visibility and financial rewards of male painters or sculptors of the same era, these female artists had become influential published scholars, internationally exhibiting artists and professors/administrative managers at art schools around the globe.

⁸ both semiotic (uncrafted) textiles and skilled narrative weaving or needlework (see Wood Conroy

John Truckle

James Ferris

William Finlay

James Ferguson

Sean McShane

Alan Stock

Cyrus Campbell

Gerard Barkley

John Robert Nelson

Hallawell

David Nocher

George Taggart

John Brian Martin

Stephen Fyffe

John McFadden

Stephen Taverner

Adrian Carroll

William Fitzpatrick

Paul Clarke

Charles Armstrong

William Harold Brown

John Victor Cunningham

David Wilson

Daniel Joseph Rouse

Brigid Foster

Brian Campbell

02:40:00

1995).

⁹ Long associated with architecture, and once a preserve of male practitioners (such as in Northern England or India). Tapestry is also linked with painting and sculpture and it has been the prerogative of modernist painters to have technicians weave from their cartoons.

¹⁰ see The Bayeux Tapestry telling the story of the Battle of Hastings 1066.

¹¹ Their feminism was based in the mid-1980s post-structuralist wave of feminism, influenced by French feminists Luce Irigaray and Julia Kristeva.

¹² Wood Conroy's academic research background, based in material culture, and cross-disciplinary training as an archaeologist/cultural anthropologist influenced Jubelin.

¹³ The elaborate crafting process may or may not be grasped by a viewer of the artwork, due to the fact that needlework represents a historically gendered female discipline and, therefore, has been somewhat invisible and erased. An attitude of disrespect and dismissal to gendered activity, such as needlework, is increasingly obvious when it remains primarily in the hands of the women living in the developing world. Persons of both genders who view such artwork seem to more easily grasp an understanding of the 'man-hours' needed, for example, in the similarly laborious, but large-scale and visible, process of constructing a building.

¹⁴ In Narelle Jubelin's exhibition, *Soft Shoulder*, some of the petit points are text transcriptions from selections of Marion Mahony Griffin's book *The Magic of America*.

¹⁵ Peggy Phelan theorises about memory, amnesia and our current culture of digital discards and endless reproductions. Her feminist work is often based on photographic and/or installation artists; she deals with trauma and the recent events of terrorism, especially in USA politics. Phelan gave a lecture and workshop at the University of Wollongong in 2004.

¹⁶ For example, The Saatchi Collection of British Young Artists' exhibited *Sensation*, at the Royal Academy, 1997; The Serpentine Gallery, London, exhibited *Loose Threads*, 1998. There have also been many theoretical publications and scholarly essays in art magazines about textiles art in the same period.



Figure 71: Narelle Jubelin of a textiles design by Marion Mahony Griffin. acrylic wall paint in *Reinventing Textiles: Postcolonialism and Creativity* Vol. 3, Paul Sharrad and Anne Collett (eds), Telos Art Publishing, Bristol, 2004.

Colm McGirr

Joe Craven

Edgar Graham

John Molloy

Tony Dawson

Gary Sheehan

Patrick Kelly

Brown Vance McKeown

Noel Lane

Jane Arbuthnot

Philip Geddes

Caroline Kennedy

Kenneth Salvesden

Stephen Dodd

02:41:36

1984

Robert Gregory Elliott

William Fullerton

Linden Colin Houston

Daniel Joseph McIntyre

Martin Hawkins

Mark Marron

Thomas John Bingham

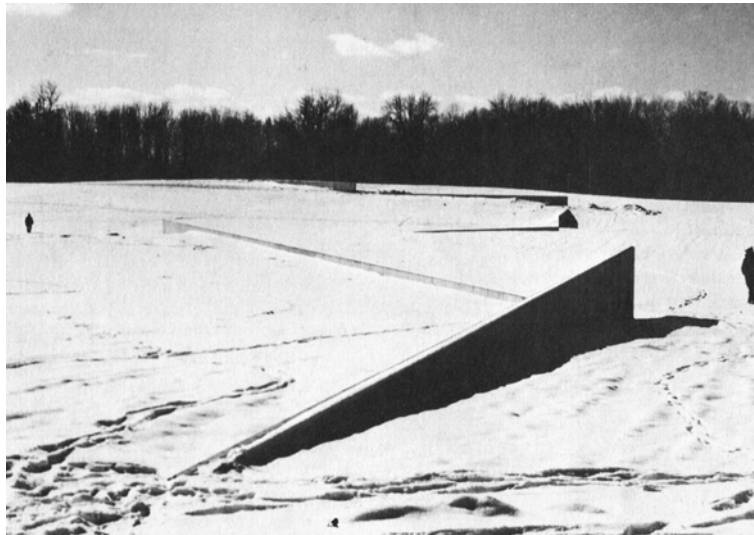
William Ritchie Savage

James Young

Chapter 6

Richard Serra: site-conscious sculpture place-makes the chiasma of a national public site

Introduction



02:43:12

Figure 72: Richard Serra , Shift, 1970-72.

all images from *Richard Serra/Sculpture*, (ed. R. Krauss), The Museum of Modern Art, New York, 1986.

In examining the work of Richard Serra, b.1939, I continue to develop issues examined in Jubelin's art. Serra is an internationally renowned sculptor who came to prominence in the conceptual minimalist school of materialist, site-conscious sculpture, from the mid-sixties to the present. His large-scale, outdoor, industrial sculpture stands in marked contrast to Jubelin's interior installations and extremely miniature handiwork. I begin with a descriptive analysis of a particularly notorious site-specific artwork by Richard Serra entitled *Tilted Arc*, located on Federal Plaza, New York City from 1979-89. As in the previous studies, my focus remains on the intersection between intimacy and the socio-political conditions of site, and the metaphoric crossover of the private and the public. Such implications are examined through the materialist concerns of his large-scale public sculpture. Serra's utilitarian material concerns, albeit in steel, an

Henry Hogan

Declan Martin

Paul Douglas Oram

Thomas Alexander

Loughlin

Herbert Burrows

William McConnell

David Montgomery

Ronald A. Funston

David Ross

Mary Travers

Trevor May

Margaret Whyte

Michael W. Dawson

Ivan Hillen

John George

Seamus Patrick

Fitzsimmons

Trevor George Elliott

Richard Quigley

Neil Clark

Thomas McGeary

Noel James Johnston

Thomas Henry Agar

Robert Huggins

William Neville Gray

historically-positioned male sculptural substance (rolled and rectangular, which references the nineteenth century USA assembly line) – may be compared to my utilitarian needlework and plain linen squares of cloth, (bolts of fabric from a Northern Irish twentieth-century industrial loom). The difference between curved sheets of steel and curved bolts of fabric, for the purposes of this exegesis, is that steel is very weighty, requiring large-scale machinery to move a sculpture into position, principally by men, and linen is lightweight using minimal alternative technical parameters to install it by – work most often done by women.

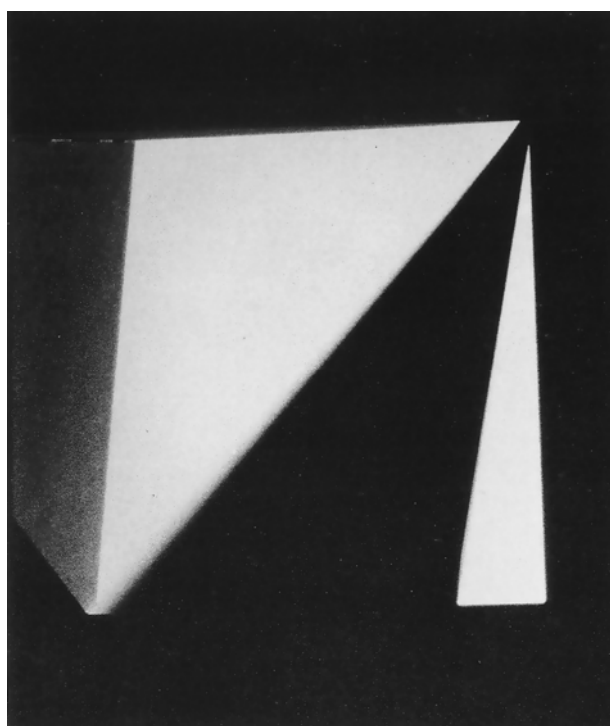


Figure 73: Richard Serra, view from interior of *Slat*, 1980-84.

Serra uses steel as a straightforward substance, without decoration, in order to reference space, spatial parameters and actions through and in space. The weighty steel is a means to fixate the viewer-reader on the absolute quality of perception of space in and around his outdoor installations. Serra plays on the juxtaposition between the erect steel (sometimes Serra used other materials such as vulcanised rubber) and the forces of gravity by removing any obvious, visible use of an aggregate or

Stephen Anderson

Hugh Gallagher

David Chambers

Jimmy Campbell

Paul McCann

Michael William Todd

Tony McAtarsney

William Alfred Price

Heather Kerrigan

Norman McKinley

Brian McNally

Benjamin Redfern

Brendan Watters

Frank Hand

Sean Edward Downes

Malcolm Alexander White

William McDonald

Malcolm Cullen

Robert D. Bennett

Michael Devine

Melvin Simpson

Sir Anthony Berry

Roberta Wakeham

Jeanne Shattock

Eric Taylor

Peter Gallimore

02:44:48

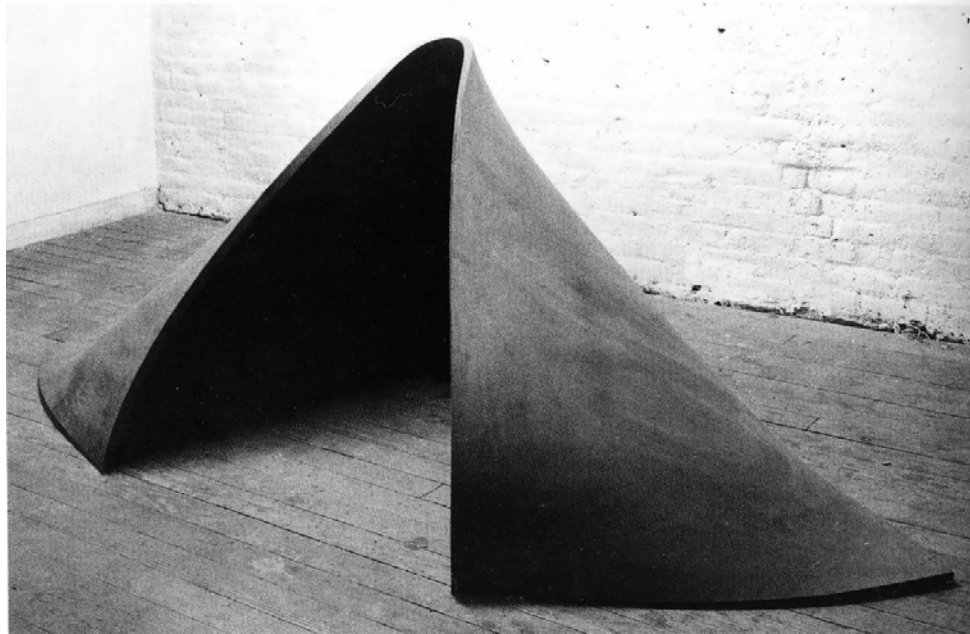


Figure 74: Richard Serra, *To Lift*, 1967.

armature which might hold the artwork into position. His work is less about steel; most importantly, it is about the transition between states of being, as can be seen in his early films. My *ILM*, while first and foremost commemorative, is also very much about that moment of perception when persons of different cultural-ethnic backgrounds, Northern Irish Protestant and Northern Irish Catholic encounter one another. My creative project has been an inquiry into the delicate balance of interaction between deeply grieving persons on *either* side of a static and embedded political divide. Serra's *Tilted Arc*, an extremely heavy, static 'wall/divide' in a large, empty courtyard, is a piece which instilled fear and terror in part, because of the historic connotation of steel with armament and weaponry. Dread and horror also may be unwittingly produced through site-specific circumstances. A controversial memorial, if situated in a public space in Northern Ireland, which dares to consider the possibility of reconciliation, directly inculcates a similarly deep-seated sense of terror and even hatred. Although such an outcome would run counter to my purpose in creating the memorial, it is something I must consider, given the on-going political

02:46:24

Frederick G. Jackson

Timothy Utteridge

Harry Muldoon

Patrick Morrissey

Muriel Maclean

Patrick Brady

William Robert
McLoughlin

Antoin Mac Geolla Bhride

Alistair Slater

Kieran Fleming

William Fleming

Daniel Doherty

Sean McIlvenna

1985

Paul Kelly

James Graham

Gerard Logue

Patrick Kerr

Mark Rosborough

Frank Murphy

Kevin Patrick Coyle

Charles Breslin

Michael Devine



Figure 75: Richard Serra, *Tilted Arc*, 1981.

situation in Northern Ireland. Serra's *Tilted Arc*, constructed through 'banal' handling of material and a specifically sited architectural positioning, unintentionally sparked incredible controversy in the markedly conservative era of the mid-1980s. Serra's subsequent lengthy court case, (although not recounted in this chapter), is important to analyse, and to learn from, if one is to work artistically in the so-called public (read: privatised, government-sanctioned) realm – especially regarding spatial concerns relating to questions of 'nationalism'. Although my work is created in a very different setting and era, public artists must accommodate various types of positions, specifically those which exist in the 'in-between space' where deeply diverse views, opinions and beliefs are held by particular persons or groups.

Serra's acutely developed sensitivity is perhaps related to his cross-cultural background: his father was Spanish and his mother Jewish. His risk-taking sense of courage is significant as seen in his use of mammoth slabs of steel and his directly authoritative manipulation of curved or torqued utilitarian 'walls' in space. Serra came to prominence in the late

02:48:00

David Devine

Douglas McElhinney

Alexander Donaldson

Geoffrey K. Campbell

John Thomas Dowd

Denis Anthony Price

Rosemary E. McGookin

Sean Brian McHenry

David Peter Topping

Paul Hillery McFerran

Ivy Winifred Kelly

Trevor Winston Harkness

Hugh McCormac

John Corcoran

Anthony Dacre

John Bell

Michael Keith Kay

Kenneth Parry

Martin Love

Thomas Wilson

Seamus Ruddy

William Heenan

William James Wilson

Tracy Ellen Doak

David James Baird

Steven George Rodgers

1960s, a time when the radical individuality of the artist, usually male, was held in high esteem and idealised as a genius. In 2005, the heroic view of the artist is no longer relevant; it seems the myth pettered out along with *Tilted Arc*'s removal, 1989. The 1990s and the millennium marked new directions. The artist must tread more carefully if he/she wishes to create works that are shockingly intimate in exposing politically divisive issues publicly. In their conceptual rhetoric, artists are wise to use more subtle tactics and seem more self-effacing than Serra. As the 'artist-as-individual' has been increasingly marginalised in a conservative climate, the artistic voices of female and minority artists have gained ground. Since the early 1990s, the role of the artist has changed; assuming the mantle of a declarative, authoritative voice, as a professional artist, must be gained through the more traditional route of higher education. Yet, artists and their works continue to inspire fear, loathing, mockery and/or derision. For *Tilted Arc* to be removed called into question the legal parameters an artist relinquishes when working in the public sphere. Serra's self-righteousness and articulateness regarding his position was an example of his hitherto male privilege as an artist. The *Tilted Arc* controversy was a uniquely peculiar incident full of interesting hypocrisies.

This chapter positions *Tilted Arc* as a type of monument¹ following the work of James E. Young, the influential theorist of the Holocaust memory/counter-memory. According to Young, a monument may reflect "both its socio-historical and aesthetic context," and can include "ironic and self-effacing conceptual installations that mark the national ambivalence and uncertainty of late twentieth-century postmodernism" (2002:1). This statement readily applies to Serra's *Tilted Arc* on Federal Plaza, which was commissioned as a sculptural landmark by the General Services Administration (GSA) of the United States government in 1979 under President Jimmy Carter's administration, and in an ironic twist, was removed by the very same agency, 1989, under President Ronald Reagan.

An interrogation of a chiasma "relationship of crossing and exchange" (Krauss 1986:33) has been an on-going area of sculptural investigation in Serra's body of work. This chapter centres on Serra's

02:49:36

Gary Smyth
Roy McAlpine
Willis Agnew
William Robert Gilliland
Charles English
James Michael McCann
Seamus McAvoy
Daniel Mallon
Kieran Murray
Martin Vance
Catherine Mahon
Gerard Mahon
James Burnette
Martin Patten
Damien McCrory
Kevin McPolin
David Hanson
Robert F. Boyd
Kurt Konig
Gordon Hanna
Edward Joseph Taggart
George Gilliland
William James Clements

1986

James McCandless

spatial concerns – his materialist constructs, as exemplified in *Tilted Arc*. A chiasma, from the Greek khasma, cross-piece, means to mark with the shape of an X. In anatomy, chiasma means an intersection of nerves. Contemporary art critic and historian of abstract sculpture, Rosalind E. Krauss (U.S.A), specifically used the word chiasma in her catalogue essay about Richard Serra’s body of work for his retrospective at the Museum of Modern Art, New York, 1986. Krauss proposed that chiasma:

...can be used linguistically to chart the reflexive crossovers between words, or it can be used to describe a spatial transivity, as in the mutual interaction of seer and seen – their activity as they exchange positions through visual space, each to leave a mark on the other. By the 1970s this formal loop, this chiasmatic trajectory, became the subject of much of Serra’s work. It is an abstract subject most often given visual form by correspondingly “abstract” elements...it is a subject one can continue to experience abstractly, syntactically, even when the medium through which is it expressed is...a real, functional, functioning object, an industrial object, for example (1986:33).

Krauss’ analysis of Serra’s work placed his art at the vanguard of the radical conceptual, minimalist site-specific genre, which began in the mid-1960s. Krauss stated that this oeuvre was developed through the arrangement of forms in space, overtly materialist concerns, and is explained through phenomenology and structural linguistics. She was interested particularly in how this type of sculpture inhabited “the realm of the transitive verb,” (1977:275) and was located “at the juncture between stillness and motion, time arrested and time passing” (1977:5).

Tilted Arc, with its siting on Federal Plaza, New York City, highlights the chiasmatic interchange of pedestrians through the space of a national plaza. It was a sculpture which ‘place-made’ (Crimp 1985:52) the transverse junction inherent in pedestrians movement through a plaza of national importance. *Tilted Arc* created a chiasmatic relationship or interchange between concave and convex spaces which, in turn, interacted with the surrounding architecture, characterized as “anonymous,

Michael Williams

Leo Scullion

Victor Foster

Martin Quinn

John Early

Derek Breen

John McCabe

Francis Bradley

Tony Gough

John O’Neill

David Allen Mulley

Thomas J. Irwin

William Pollock

02:51:12

Keith White

James Hazlett

Seamus Turlough

McIlwaine

Margaret Caulfield

Mark Frizzell

Herbert McConville

David Wilson

Colm McKeivitt

David Leslie McBride

William Laurence Smyth

Andrew French

Elizabeth Masterson

overscaled and inhuman” (Crimp 1986:53). Serra’s sculptural concerns which interest me and have influenced my body of artwork are those prompted by the ways in which permanently-sited sculpture challenges the viewer and facilitate awareness between subject, object and other, over time. In particular, *Tilted Arc* emphasized the dialectic relationship between a certain kind of public dialogue necessary for citizenship and the private concerns of the individual. My current re-reading of the removal of *Tilted Arc* raises the question: can the sustainability of diverse and divisive communities in western democracies be enhanced by permanent, publicly-sited or monumental artwork which is challenging to the viewer-reader?

Philosopher of contemporary ethics and aesthetics, Marcia M. Eaton, states that human beings need to apprehend and establish relationships to larger-than-life-sized objects in order to augment personal contemplation and to develop group discussion with other citizens (256). She declares that complex structures, such as certain artworks, foster a developed dialogic awareness that characterizes flourishing communities (ibid.).

Communities are more likely to sustain themselves if they achieve a delicate balance between tolerance for new ideas that allows for revision necessary for continued existence and a chaos that may result from a Babel of competing voices. Great art often repays attention precisely because it embodies not simply multiple perspectives, but even contradictions (257).

Descriptive Analysis of *Tilted Arc*

Tilted Arc was accepted as a concept in 1980 and installed in 1981 near a disused fountain-reflecting pool. It was a 63.5 mm thick steel plate, 3.658 m in height and 36.58 m long, “anchored into the existing steel and concrete substructure of the [hardscape] plaza” (Serra 1989:35). Seen from above, in plan-view, the plaza circular-paved pattern hardscape-pavement was intercepted by a black arc. Its slight radial curve arched its way across the plaza, creating a relation and tension between concave and convex spaces which signal public and private spheres. *Tilted Arc* signifies a typically

02:52:48

Frank Hegarty

Brian David Brown

Terence McKeever

Robert Hill

John McVitty

Carl Davis

Michael Robert Bertram

Brian Leonard

Colm McCallan

Martin Duffy

Peter Kilpatrick

Karl Blackbourne

Charles Allen

Mark Bacon

John Kyle

Denis Taggart

Dermot Peter McCann

Patrick Murray

Robert Coggles

Paddy McAlister

Mervyn Bell

David McVeigh

Kenneth Robinson

John Doweing Bingham

James McKernan

Raymond Mooney

stable architectural archway, yet a destabilised one, or an arc situated ‘on its side.’ *Tilted Arc* disrupted the ordinary ‘hurried route’ of pedestrians, dramatically inserting itself into ‘the public’s field of vision,’ (Crimp 1986:53). Anna Chave, a USA theorist known for her analysis of the sexual and ideological inscription of minimalist sculpture, stated that *Tilted Arc* was problematic in that a person could not see over the top of it, making some persons feel unsafe (Chave 23). Pedestrians were inconvenienced by the uncompromising nature of the steel form, forced to slow down through their encounter with such an alien structure in their midst. To be in close proximity to a massive steel slab on its edge, set at an off-balance tilt, was a disturbing, somewhat claustrophobic experience to some viewers (ibid.). Yet many people consider Serra’s sculptures, including *Tilted Arc*, extraordinarily beautiful (Crimp 2000:67). The work employed a kind of alteration of a viewer’s typical spatial-temporal perception - a specific tenet of this kind of materialist sculpture. Others considered the work “awkwardly massive” (Crimp 1986:50).

Serra conceived his artwork to have an overwhelming physical presence that unsettles viewers. He accomplished this through the sheer materiality of *Tilted Arc* – heavy steel plate, apparently magically twisted into shape and fastened down in a permanently imbalanced position. The slightly angled plate-walls in Serra’s work hold the possibility of collapse even while being suspended in place (Rosenstock 12). Viewers are obliged to adjust the relation of their own bodies in space in order to comprehend Serra’s sculptural oeuvre, including *Tilted Arc*, (both visually and through a phenomenological, corporeal awareness) (Krauss 1977:279; Morris 1993:199; Serra 1989:41). In doing so, Serra was a main proponent of site-specificity in sculpture from the 1970s - 80s; he depicted “the hidden material conditions of art” (Crimp 1986:43). The steel was left untreated, developing a thin rust patina over time. The visibility of this process is suggestive of leaving exposed the material concerns of the art – the material subtleties of an undescriptive surface, refusing to be anything other than the material’s own integrity.

02:54:24

Joseph Leroy Webb

Roy Melia

Martin Alfred Blaney

Desmond Dobbin

Kathleen Mullan

Terry Mullan

Billy Dickson

Kenneth Johnston

Derek Patterson

Alan McCormack

Alice Kelly

Peter Paul Bradley

Desmond Caldwell

Thomas McCartan

1987

Ivan Crawford

Thomas Power

John Gerard O’Reilly

Clifford Clemo

George Shaw

Mary McGlinchey

Tony McCluskey

Iris Farley

Nigel Vincent Watton

Michael Kearney

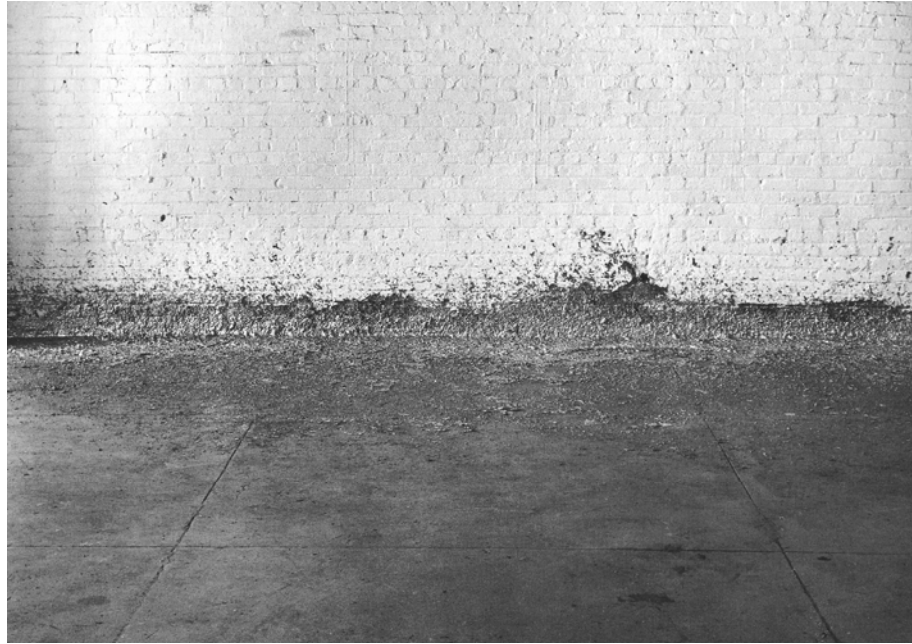


Figure 76: Richard Serra, *Splashing*, 1968.

According to Crimp, *Tilted Arc* was the permanent manifestation of *Splashing* from 1968, a line of molten lead thrown along the corner of a warehouse floor (1986:43). *Splashing* and *Tilted Arc* were sited works, bound by how they altered the conditions of space in which they were situated. Critic Crimp described *Splashing* as a precedent-setting artwork, a work which:

Obscur[ed] a marker for our orientation in interior space, claiming that space as the ground of a different kind of perceptual experience (Crimp 1986:42).

Both *Splashing* and *Tilted Arc* became well-known examples of a non-commodity art practice. With his 1960s gesture, Serra had radicalised the existing tenets of sculpture. By the mid-1980s, with the infamous lawsuit for the removal of *Tilted Arc* from Federal Plaza², non-object-oriented modernist sculpture had met the limits of its idealistic radical aesthetics. Serra's artwork was too literal or crude in its exposure of the underlying hypocrisy in the ideology of a seat or plaza of national power. The dismantling of the monumental *Tilted Arc* became emblematic of the end of the 1970s era, when diverse citizens could congregate easily in

02:56:00

Willie Johnston

Thomas Conor Maguire

Lorraine McCausland

Peter Nesbitt

John Chambers

Fergus Conlon

Gerard Steenson

Anthony Jude McCarthy

Arnold Jameson

Emmanuel Gargan

Kevin Barry Duffy

Gerard Logue

Leslie Jarvis

Austin Wilson

John Bennison

Iain James O'Connor

Laurence Marley

George Shaw

James Oldman

Samuel Lawrence

Frederick Armstrong

Robert McLean

Charles McIlmurray

Andrew Mason

Hugh Hill McFarlane

David John Ead

accessible public places to reflect and dialogue – aspects which enrich life in a democracy.

Application to the Northern Ireland Context

Serra’s work informs my artistic practice, particularly about the siting of a controversial monument or sculpture situated in a violently divisive public place. Serra’s *Tilted Arc* was created on federal, publicly-owned, land. His work may be seen to facilitate art which produces encounters of what philosopher Simon Critchley called “the ethical inequality of myself faced with the Other” (qtd. in Wodiczko 1999:8) , which Hannah Arendt would describe as an “unleashing of passions” (qtd. in Wodiczko 1999:12).

During the same politically conservative (Thatcher-Reagan) mid-1980s period of the ‘stasis of the polis’, Seamus Heaney, wrote a poem called *Terminus* about disputed boundaries or territories in Northern Ireland. Heaney, one of the foremost poetic-political voices in N.I, attempts to explore notions of undivided Northern Irish identity(ies). Written in the mid-1980s, *Terminus* was an exploration of the god of the borderlands, a chiasma threshold. In a book published in 2002, Heaney outlined the processes of his work, together with selections of his prose and poetry. He described a child who dares to wade into *the current* as someone who is also ‘rooted’ in *Terminus*, which I read to be a description of a ‘chiasmata’ experience of place. Heaney describes human beings as possessing a simultaneous:

Capacity to be attracted at one and the same time to the security of what is intimately known and to the challenges and entrancements of what is beyond us (51-2).

This is the same conceptual territory explored in *Tilted Arc*, and conditioned-informed by the static/conservative politics of the time in which both works were produced. The physically rooted also may be an emotionally fragile space. Heaney was fixated upon such a typically Northern Irish space created in *Terminus*. He describes his influence in

Harry Henry

Tom Cooke

William Graham

Maurice Gibson

Cecily Gibson

William Marchant

Finbar McKenna

Gary McCartan

Patrick Joseph Kelly

Declan John Arthurs

Seamus Donnelly

Michael Anthony Gormley

Eugene Kelly

James Lynagh

Patrick Oliver McKearney

Gerard O’Callaghan

Anthony Hughes

Ivan Anderson

Charles Watson

Dermot Hackett

Patrick Cunningham

Samuel McClean

Joseph Leach

Joseph McIlwaine

Nathaniel Cush

Robert Guthrie

02:57:36

writing the poem, as:

In the kitchen of the house where I grew up there was a cement floor, and one of my first memories is the feel of its coldness and smoothness under my feet...I'll never forget that contact of the warm skin and cold floor, the immediate sensation of surprise; and then something deeper, more gradual, a sensation of consolidation and familiarity, the whole reassuring foundation of the earth coming up into you through the soles of your feet (55).

This passage could serve as an apt description of *Tilted Arc*, except in Serra's case, the concrete is exposed, utilitarian steel. In discussing his poem *Terminus*, Heaney states that "inheritance of a divided world is a disabling one"... cornering and trapping people into pre-determined positions (60). One could also call such inheritance, destabilising. Each artist: Serra, with a stroke of steel, and Heaney, with the stroke of a pen, draws attention to that moment of free choice when something else or other conditions may be possible (see Serra's film *Hand Catching Lead*, Serra, 1968). When the artist emphasises such an instant, he/she critiques static, authoritarian institutions and acceptable levels of embedded intolerance. Yet this, in turn, can disturb underlying fears and insecurities which occur when more enlivened mechanisms of democracy or deeply aware social practice are at play (see Crimp 2000:75). To use an example in my own work: I witnessed how disturbing my *ILM* was when I installed it in an academic corridor. Although the lightweight linen hung and draped freely down the centre of the hallway, an occupational safety and health hazard report analysis was lodged. One worried colleague became quite irate, criticising the entire exhibition as negative and problematic. Underlying this may have been other, more subtle, concerns about a visual and sensual 'up-close' encounter with a controversial memorial in a space not normally used for installation purposes. The disturbing content of a memorial which names persons 'of difference' and provokes thoughts about the manner in which they were killed, could have destabilised the ordinary routines of persons in an administrative office, university environment.

02:59:12

Thomas Emmanuel Wilson

Dominic Jude O'Connor

John Tracey

James Keelan

Edward Campbell

William Reynolds

Alan McQuiston

Thomas Hewitt

William Richard Megrath

Norman Kennedy

William Cockburn

Michael Power

Ernest Stanley Carson

Michael Philip Malone

Winston Finley

Eamonn Maguire

William Henry

Patrick Hamill

Harry Sloan

Steven Megrath

Jim Meighan

Ian McKeown

James McDaid

Tommy Dickson

Francisco Notarantonio

Paddy Deery



Figure 77: Richard Serra, *Terminal*, 1977

Migrant artists³, or artists preoccupied with problems of citizenship or kinship displacement in divisive societies, readily position or locate installation work in intersectional, hybrid or chiasmatic conditions. Such a place is a comfortable (moderate), 'in-between' space – safe, on the one hand, yet more provocative on the other (because it is ambiguous and not static). Examples of other chiasmatic sitings include Northern Ireland artists: Willie Doherty with *Re-Run*, a video installation from a film on the bridge between Derry/Londonderry's Catholic and Protestant areas, 2002; and, during the *Horsehead International Public Projects*, 1999, the alphabetical

Eddie McSheffrey
William Mullan
Agnes Mullan
Kitchener Johnston
Jessie Johnston
Wesley Armstrong
Bertha Armstrong
Edward Armstrong
John Megaw
Georgina Quinton
Samuel Gault
Marie Wilson
Adam Lambert
Thomas McAuley
Martin Bryan
George Seawright
Gerald Docherty
John McMichael

03:00:48

1988

Billy Kane
William Stewart
Timothy Armstrong
Anthony McKiernan
Jack Kielty
Colin James Gilmore

reading of the names of the dead in a Belfast urban pedestrian tunnel, by conceptual performance artist Alistair McKinnon.

Conclusion

Richard Serra's *Titled Arc*, 1979-89, "refus[ed] to play the prescribed role of falsely reconciling [catachresis] contradictions" of public space in a 1980's USA environment (Crimp 1986:55). Instead, *Titled Arc* as a site-specific art work, highlighted the difficulties and chasms between the exposed individual/individual rights and the withdrawal of state support for social service policies and the arts in an era of economic rationalism. The social conditions of contemporary public space work to produce a "melancholy of the public sphere" (Butler 2000: 81), lacking in legitimate community life that contains permission of an attainment of humanness for all (Agamben 1998 qtd. in Butler *ibid.*). My *ILM*, if sited publicly in a central location in Northern Ireland, would attempt to develop interest in what philosopher Judith Butler calls a more legitimate humanness. I would hope *The ILM* could address the issue of a plurality of difference in a more sustainable public sphere. Yet, is such an idea simply too idealistic or naïve? Serra's work captured and prefigured that condition of the alienation of public space in the post-1980's era of globalisation. *Titled Arc*, a permanent 'people's monument' in a national plaza, created by one authoritative, articulate artist, is no longer such a viable means by which to encourage 'welcome' public discourse. This is because such a sculpture might just encourage a gathering spot that inspires activities or protests, such as the demand for democratic rights (see Crimp 2000:77; also see image of video footage of a protest at the site). The collective political needlework projects, previously outlined in chapter four, may be seen as workable, mobile methodologies for re-investing public space with significance in 2005.

This case study draws benefit from reasoned feminist reflection and new knowledge about public and private spheres. Serra's body of sculpture, from the 1970s to the present, investigates materialist concerns that preoccupy the (embodied) movement of the viewer in space. Yet when

03:02:24

Alan Johnston

Aidan McAnespie

Fredrick Starrett

James Cummings

Brendan Burns

Brendan Moley

Mairead Farrell

Sean Savage

Danny McCann

Kevin McCracken

Charles McGrillen

Kevin Mulligan

Thomas McErlean

John Murray

Caoimhin MacBradaigh

Gillian Johnston

Derek Wood

David Howes

Clive Graham

William Burleigh

Edward Gibson

Lyndon Morgan

Ian Skinner

John Millar Reid

John Baxter

Hugh Hehir

Serra's work was sited within a centre of USA federal governmental power, his monument became a controversial focus which pre-figured the limits of public space and highlighted the scarcity of engaged dialogue within the public life in the United States of America. The 1980s were a less tolerant time when the radical individuality of an American artist such as Serra, and radical democracy, symbolised in the plaza with *Tilted Arc*, were diminished for the so-called security of the public good. In 2005, individuals have become increasingly atomized, and there is a dearth of vibrant community life. Public projects about socio-political issues such as those described in chapter four, or ephemeral projects such as Christo and Jeanne-Claude's veiling/wrapping projects (see *Wrapped Reichstag*, 1971 – 1995) or Krzysztof Wodiczko's video projections on architecture, (which utilize site-conscious strategies) maintain creative freedom while preserving an interface with the public terrain.

Tilted Arc was essentially a sheet of hot-rolled, industrial steel, torqued and sited by Serra in such a way that necessitated an unspecified, but actively engaged reading by public viewers of all kinds. As such, I have considered it as a version of a contemporary monument. From 1985-1988, during undergraduate art studies, I was a regular visitor to Serra's *Carnegie* sculpture (interior and exterior) in Pittsburgh and his body of site-conscious sculpture has informed my own oeuvre. It speaks to me as an artist who originated from, and deals with, the issues of the ongoing divided and violent country of Northern Ireland, because I recognise the conditions that Serra highlights in his body of work. As exemplified in the *Tilted Arc* analysis, Serra's position demonstrated the impossibility of the idea of neutral space and the increase of the commodification of site sculpture since the late 1980s. A thorough reading of the court tribunal documents, among other things, how the chiasmatic conditions of site activated person's virulent opinions about the artwork. *Tilted Arc* may be seen as a type of mirror of our inner and outer, intimate and public, social conditioning. Maya Lin, in the next generation after Serra, came to national prominence as a young sculptor-architect in the mid-1980s, U.S.A. I focus upon Lin's use of text (over spatial concerns) in her intimate and poetic memorials in the next case study.

03:04:00

Terry McDaid
 Stephen McGahan
 Damien Devlin
 Paul McBride
 Derek Hayes
 Michael Darcy
 William Totten
 Robert Seymour
 Michael James Winkler
 William J. Patterson
 Graham P. Lambie
 Derek W. Green
 Mark Clavey
 Ian Metcalfe
 Kenneth Stronge
 Hugh Terence Delaney
 Eamon Gilroy
 Elizabeth Hamill
 Seamus Woods
 John Howard
 Robert James Hanna
 Maureen Hanna
 David Hanna
 Brendan Davison
 Michael Bryan Matthews
 Michael Robbins

Endnotes

¹ According to James E. Young, “Like other cultural and aesthetic forms in Europe and America, the monument has undergone radical transformation over the course of the 20th century. As intersection between public art and political memory, the monument has necessarily reflected the aesthetic and political revolutions, as well as the wider crisis of representation, following all of this century’s major upheavals – including both the First and Second World Wars, the Vietnam War, and the rise and fall of communist regimes in the former Soviet Union and its Eastern European satellites. In every case, the monument reflects both its socio-historic and aesthetic context: artists working in eras of cubism, expressionism, socialist realism, earthworks, minimalism, or conceptual art remain answerable to the needs of both art and official history. The result has been a metamorphosis of the monument from the heroic, self-aggrandizing figurative icons of the late 19th century, which celebrated national ideals and triumphs, to the antiheroic, often ironic and self-effacing conceptual installations that mark the national ambivalence and uncertainty of the late 20th century postmodernism” (1 - 7).

² The extreme difficulties with the acceptance of Serra’s *Tilted Arc* were less about the artwork than about its context: *Tilted Arc* was installed during a decade when the increasing privatisation of public space in New York city was a fundamental problem (Crimp 2000:72; Wodiczko 1999:6 and see Deutsche 1996).

³ Serra’s father, Tony, was from Majorca, Spain and his mother, Gladys, was a Russian Jew.

03:05:36

Frank Campbell

John G. Warnock

Roy Butler

Raymond McNicol

William Hassard

Frederick Love

Alexander Bannister

Seamus Morris

Peter Dolan

James McPhilemy

Samuel Geoffrey Patton

Richard Heakin

Frederick Otley

Michael Laverty

Jason Burfitt

Richard Greener

Mark Anthony Norsworthy

Stephen James Wilkinson

Jason Spencer Winter

Blair Edgar Morris Bishop

Alexander Stephen Lewis

Peter Lloyd Bullock

Alan Shields

Gerard Harte

Martin Harte

Brian Mullin

Chapter 7

Maya Lin's Visual Poetry, 1982 – 1993.

I built a [VVM] memorial that asked us to accept death as the primary cost of war. Having studied countless other memorials, I found that this is rarely addressed at a national level, though sometimes it is dealt with at a local level.

Maya Lin from *Dialogues in Public Art* 2000:118

Introduction

Maya Lin (b.1959) came to U.S.A national prominence, as a young sculptor/architect, in the mid 80's. I examine her use of text, over spatial concerns, in her intimate and poetic memorials from 1982 to the present, beginning with a brief analysis of three memorials: *The Vietnam Veterans Memorial* (VVM) 1982, *The Civil Rights Memorial* (CRM) 1988, and *The Women's Table at Yale* (WTY) 1993, the latter commemorating the entrance of females to the university. I centre on what Lin calls a 'hybrid monument' (2000:4:02-03)¹, analyzing her careful consideration of facts: names (VVM), events (CRM) and numbers (WTY), as visual poetry. *The VVM* is of interest as a national, reconciliatory memorial which encourages interactive viewing to overcome the pain of division, bitterness, and to forgive, as well as, to grieve.

Maya Lin's body of work has similarities to, yet is distinctive from, the site-specific conceptualism of Serra². Site-conscious sculpture makes people aware of their surroundings, shifts behavioural and perceptual orientation towards site and aids a chiasmatic, experiential passage which incorporates the notion of time (Serra 1989:41; Krauss 1977: 282; Lin 2000: 2:03). Each artist also responds to the contemporary socio-political, as well as cultural-historical circumstances reflected in the use of a site (Serra *ibid.*; Lin 2000: 2:03 and 3:05). While Serra's work is more confrontational in his

Sean Dalton

Sheila Lewis

Billy Quee

Colin Abernethy

Gerard Slane

Stephan McKinney

Henry McNamee

Brian Armour

John Armour

Jim Craig

Victor George Rainey

Norman McKeown

Wilson Smyth

Hugh McCrone

Mary Rooney

William Monteith

Barney Lavery

Emma Donnelly

Phelim McNally

John Corry

William John Moreland

1989

Harry Keys

Ian Catney

David Dornan

03:07:12

use of steel as a material, with its terrifying military connotations, Lin's artwork is equally courageous as it is terrifying because her works deal with emotionally traumatic material. Lin's courageous designs entice viewers on an experiential journey of healing through grief, as in the *Vietnam Veterans Memorial*. Lin's two other memorials, of 1988 and 1993, each commemorate bitter-sweet success after struggle. Her architectonic table-artworks mediate trauma for the viewer through the participatory element of a touchable, thin veil of water overflowing stone.

Personal Background of 'Anonymous Entry 1026'³

As a self-described educationalist, Lin is a sculptor who works with an ethics of care (2000: 5:04; 12:03). Her mother was a poet and her father a ceramist, both scholarly academics, migrants from China. They taught at Ohio University in Athens, Ohio, USA, where Lin grew up (2000: 5:04). Lin describes her background:

Looking back I realise I had led a very insulated and isolated childhood...I ended up making anything and everything – the entire gamut of crafts, from macramé to silversmithing to lost wax bronze casting...It also kept me separate from much of what was going on, not just in Athens, Ohio, but in the world. Kent State⁴, the war in Vietnam, and Civil Rights struggles... (Lin 2000: 5:05).

Lin's experience of both textiles and sculpture as crafts informs her body of mature architectural design work. During the implementation of her award-winning *VVM*, she demonstrated a reflective persona and an ability to remain dispassionate as a practitioner, even at a young age, under the stress of viciously conflicting public opinion, which reflected upon her as a designer (Lin 2001:113).

Counter-monument or intimate, hybrid memorial

Contemporary commemorative sculpture calls for a very different kind of response and presence than the usual heroic monument that typically

03:08:48

Stephen Montgomery

Nicholas Peacock

James Joseph Connolly

Tony Fusco

Pat Finucane

John Joe Davey

Stephen McCrea

Patrick Feeney

Norman Duncan

Joseph Fenton

Gabriel Mullaly

Leslie Dallas

Ernest Rankin

Austin Nelson

Miles D. Amos

Stephen Cummins

Jim McCartney

Thomas John Hardy

John Irvine

Niall Davies

David Braniff

Harry Breen

Bob Buchanan

Gerard Curran

Gerard Casey

Joanne Reilly

commemorates war (Sturken 165). While still a young undergraduate architecture student, Maya Lin won the anonymous competition for the design of *The Vietnam Veterans Memorial* in 1981. The subsequent construction of Lin's 'counter-monument,' or intimate, hybrid memorial, was precedent-setting in the genre of memorial architecture. *The Vietnam Veterans Memorial* was built at a time when bereavement studies, psychological post-traumatic stress research, and memory studies within cultural history, were emerging fields of interest, along with a heightened awareness of post-World War II peace and conflict-transformation studies (see Sturken 176).

Reconciliatory Monument: *The Vietnam Veterans Memorial*, 1981

The aftermath of the longest-running war in USA history, the Vietnam War, 1959 – 1975, still bred controversy, ill feelings and denial into the early 1980s. In 1979, the war veteran, Jan C. Scruggs, conceived of a Veterans' memorial for those who served in Vietnam. He was driven by the bitter grief he felt for fallen comrades, killed beside him, in 'the mire' of Vietnam (Swerdlow 558). He founded *The Vietnam Veterans Fund*, with Robert W. Doubek and John Wheeler, to impel the building of a memorial. In 1980, a two-acre site was bequeathed by President Jimmy Carter for *The Vietnam Veterans Memorial* on The Mall, near the Constitution Gardens, Washington, DC. Subsequently, Maya Lin aligned her design with the Washington Monument, sixty metres in the left direction with the Lincoln Memorial to the right. The design concept brief called for the unusual gesture of listing the 58,000 names of those killed⁵ and that the monument would have a reconciliatory theme. Robert W. Doubek supervised the grueling compilation of names and Scruggs, Doubek and Wheeler remained supportive of the young Maya Lin throughout the lengthy public bureaucratic processes for the implementation of the memorial. These veterans felt that they were "trustees of a portion of the national heart and the *Vietnam Veterans Memorial* would help bind the nation's wounds" (Swerdlow 559). Maya Lin wanted her memorial to acknowledge the service and sacrifice of the veterans, giving them and their loved ones a public homecoming and a place to privately reflect on their losses after a

Francis Galbraith

William Thompson

John Griffiths

Stephen McGonigle

Malachy Trainor

Adam Gilbert

James Hamilton

Liam McKee

David Black

Alexander Cameron

Norman Annett

Steve Smith

William James Frazer

John McAnulty

John Devine

Alexander Bell

Seamus Duffy

Loughlin Maginn

Patrick McKenna

Brian Robinson

Margaret Robinson

Heidi Hazell

Kevin Frogett

Mick Ball

John Andrew Cleatheroe

David McMillan

period of ten years of denial (2000: 4:16 & 4:05). Each element of the design went through a lengthy, highly publicized administrative committee process before the design was finalized and allowed to proceed.

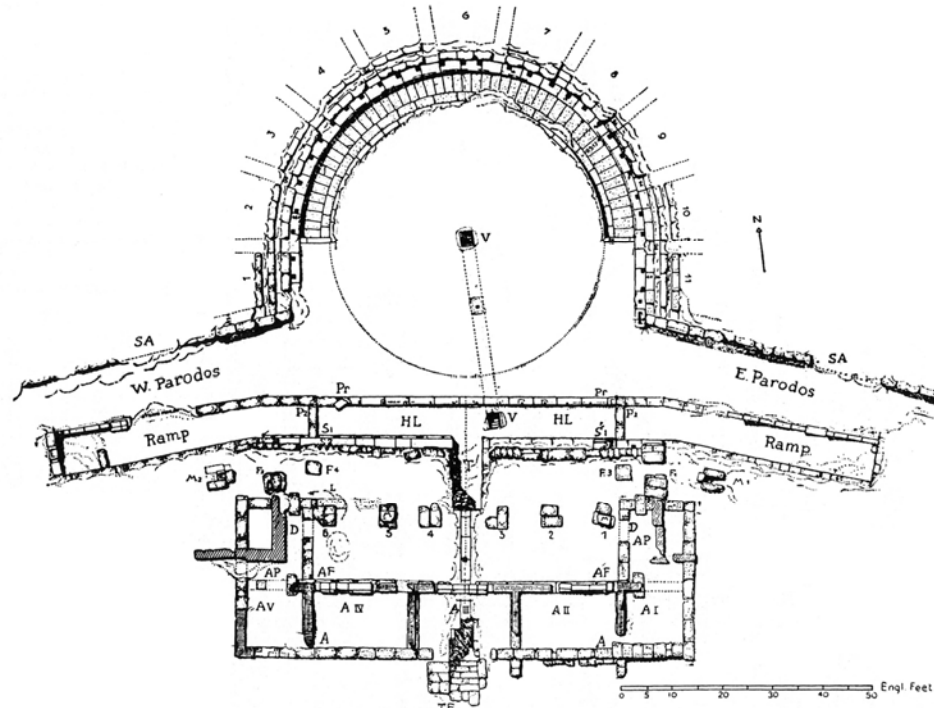


FIG. 64. Plan of Theatre at Eretria

Figure 78: Greek Theatre: Plan of Theatre at Eretria, Fig.64. *The Theatre of Dionysus in Athens*. A.W Pickard-Cambridge, Oxford University Press, 1973.

A Greek Theatre

Lin stated that her design linked two strong symbols for the country, “I wanted to create a unity between the nation’s past and present” (2000: 4:11). The memorial consists of two seventy-six metre long polished black granite walls, sunk into the earth, which is cut open like a ‘geode’ in a chevron-shape (Lin 2000: 4:14). The walls are three metres below ground at the corner apex. When her design was revealed, there was public controversy. Claims were made that her semi-underground structure, which alluded to ‘tomb,’ was unheroic, unpatriotic, and a negative statement in its black stone colour⁶. Lin’s design was proving almost too difficult for government officials and the mainstream public to consider

Richard George Fice

Dean Patric Pavey

Mark Petch

Timothy Reeves

Robert Simmonds

Trevor James Davis

Richard Mark Jones

James Henry Babington

Alwyn Harris

Thomas Gibson

Christopher Nolan

Robert A. Metcalfe

Michael Marshall

Maheshkumar Islania

Nivruti Mahesh Islania

Robert Colin Burns

Ian Johnston

Robert Glover

David Halligan

Stephen Paul Wilson

Donald Cameron

MacAuley

Matthew Edward Marshall

Liam Ryan

Michael Devlin

Michael Patterson

03:12:00

enduring as a permanent landscape feature in the national capital. But, once built, *The VVM* did, indeed, produce an important catharsis for the Vietnam generation in the USA, well beyond the specific grief of the loved ones of those killed⁷ (Denning 4).

Lin's *VVM* recalls an ancient Greek Theatre in design; such theatres used the natural slope of the hillside as an outdoor architectural substructure. The theatre was frequented by all citizens during annual Athenian festivals (474 - 534 BC), where the genre of the tragedy was produced (Wiles 93). The theatre-going ritual provided a particularly important public catharsis for the community in order, for example, to air questions about man's existence and universal ideas about justice. In the first period of Greek drama (before the fifth century) the chorus was particularly important, entering and exiting from side wings called the *paraskenia* which led to a central area with an altar (Watt 13-17). Lin's design-construction consists of two central descending passages which lead towards a central area. Her memorial design relies on words; the walls acting almost as backdrops for whispering, calling out, touching, and making rubbings of the names of the dead. Viewers are inserted into the drama's chorus through their participation by entering and exiting the passageway, and with the reflection of their images mirrored back to them, among the names. The focal point is the central apex, where the highest walls meet; an apex in the chevron shape (at an angle of 125 degrees, 12 minutes). Viewers are forced into a direct engagement with Maya Lin's memorial, through this 'acted-out' journey. At the apex are the years 1958, the beginning of the war and 1975, the end (2000: 4:05). Visitor-viewers are, thus, actors in the unfolding narrative of a time-based descent through 'the valley' of death, plummeting the depths of their grief in order to relocate loved ones through the passage of time, and then gathering themselves back together in a full circle, re-emerging into the landscape of the living. *The VVM* continues to be one of the most well-embraced and frequently visited public monuments in the USA (Scruggs and Swerdlow 159).

James Houston

1990

Harry Dickey

Martin Byrne

Olven Kilpatrick

Peter John Thompson

Edward Paul Hale

John Joseph McNeill

Derek Monteith

Charles Love

Sam Marshall

Thomas A. Jameson

Eamon Quinn

Clifford Lyness

Billy McClune

George Starrett

Roger Joseph Bradley

John Bradley

Michael Adams

John Birch

Steven Smart

Eoin David Morley

Martin Corrigan

Brian McKimm

Kenneth Graham

03:13:36

Chronology of Names

Maya Lin stated:

I always wanted the names to be chronological, to make it so that those who served and returned from the war could find their place in the memorial...the chronological sequence began and ended at the apex so that the time line would circle back to itself and close the sequence. A progression in time is memorialized...To find one name, chances are you will see the others close by, and you will see yourself reflected through them [in the smoky black granite] (*italics mine*; 2000: 4:11).

Maya Lin argued that this chronological order was central to her design and she had to convince the Vietnam veterans of her rationale. The design required the names to be listed by the day veterans had died. This stroke of brilliance is crucial to Lin's design. The effectiveness of the chronological strategy was followed by the authors of *Lost Lives* in their memorial book for those killed in the Northern Ireland troubles when conceiving of their book in 1992. In *The VVM*, the names begin at the apex, starting with the year 1959, running to the end of the right-hand wall and then back down from the left-hand side, ending at the bottom of the apex, with 1975. It is a circle, closed by the viewer. Maya Lin and others discuss the aspect of her use of text at great length and describe the apex as the spine of 'the book', the strongest point of the memorial as a structure (2000:4:14). At the entrance to the passage towards the apex or spine, a directory book lists all veterans and their years of service. A visitor to the memorial can use this directory to locate a particular name on one of the panels along the passageway-wall.

A Greek Epic

Maya Lin described her design as to be read as an epic Greek poem (Scruggs and Swerdlow 78; 571). The Greek epic genre became a literary tool worldwide on the strength of its Greco-Roman origins, popular in ancient Athens. The epic had mass appeal to "help focus our vision,

Graham A. Stewart

Charles Chapman

Nick Spanos

Stephen Melrose

William Robert Davies

Michael J. Dillon-Lee

Patrick Boyle

James Sefton

Ellen Sefton

Gary Meyer

Harold John Beckett

Martin Hughes

William Sloss

David Sterritt

William James Hanson

Joshua Cyril Willis

Catherine Dunne

Patrick Flood

Ian Gow

John Judge

Andrew David Bogle

Emmanuel Shiels

Louis Robinson

Colin McCullough

William Allister

Karen Reilly

03:15:12

creating categories that facilitate comparison and contrast...against which individual tales can be understood” (Fowler 173). In the Greek epic tradition, “the journey, for both mortal and immortal protagonist is about coming to terms with death, the pain of loss, and mortal limits”; a pattern of wrath, withdrawal, and return (Foley 94) Lin infers the same type of quest in the architectural structure of her *VVM*. A visitor becomes an actor or choral-member-orator in their own epic drama. By having the courage to encounter the tragic state, a person eventually rejoins the community, after an arduous passage, through time, in the underworld (see Foley on “liminal” experience 95-6).

An Interface of a Touchable Name



Figure 79: Lettering inscription detail of names on *Vietnam Veteran’s Memorial*.
Maya Lin *Boundaries*, Simon & Schuster, 2000. p. 4.22/23,
‘A typographer will compose a text line by line for the printed page; when text is
incised in stone, the engraving begins to take on more life than a normal or
standard typeface’.

03:16:48

- Martin Peake*
- Denis Carville*
- George Friars*
- Martin Gerard McCaughey*
- Desmond Gerard Grew*
- Samuel Todd*
- Stephen Craig*
- Dermot McGuinness*
- David Maurice Pollock*
- William Aiken*
- Frank Hughes*
- Patsy Gillespie*
- Stephen Burrows*
- Stephen Roy Beacham*
- Vincent J. Scott*
- David Andrews Sweeney*
- Paul Desmond Worrell*
- Cyril John Smith*
- William Skey*
- Tommy Casey*
- Martin Keenan*
- Albert Cooper*
- Gary Campbell*
- Malachy McIvor*
- William David W. Murphy*
- ThomasGeorge Taylor*

I always saw the wall as pure surface, an interface between light and dark...The wall dematerializes as a form [the granite veneer is thin at its top edge] and allows the names to *become the object*, a pure and reflective surface that would allow visitors the chance to see themselves with the names...the idea of a dark mirror into and shadowed mirrored image of the space, a space we cannot enter and from which the names separate us, *an interface* between the world of the living and the world of the dead (italics mine; Lin 2000: 4:14).

Maya Lin directs us to consider the names as ‘the object’ and the passage into the memorial as akin to a “gaping scream” (2000: 4:11). She references *The Lutyens Memorial to The Missing*, although his is an archway, and hers a descending passage. In the book, *To Heal a Nation*, about the processes of the conception and building of *The VVM*, Jan Scruggs and Joel Swerdlow, both Vietnam Veterans, likened the conceptual process of finding a mate’s name to the process of finding a body on the battlefield (Swerdlow 571).

The fact that *The VVM* is colloquially referred to as *The Wall* is a misnomer, yet it does emphasise one of the key elements of the memorial. The wall is a veneer, a thin slice of polished black granite with a high content of reflective mica. The architects were eager that the wall seemed more substantial along the top edge, which was also visible, but Lin did not agree. The veterans understood her chronological design when they examined the final compilation of an enormous alphabetical Defense Department listing of Vietnam fatalities. Lin’s design carried the sense of profound, unique loss each name carried (Swerdlow 571) and her design concept was carried out, eventually, according to her authoritative, sensitive specifications.

Norman Kendall

Keith Dowe

Alexander Patterson

Thomas Maguire

Raymond Robinson

Hubert Gilmore

David Shiels

Wilfred Wethers

Fergal Caraher

1991

Patrick Sheehy

Gervais Lynch

Cullen Stephenson

Sean Rafferty

David Corner

Peter McTasney

Paul Damien Sutcliffe

John Quinn

Dwayne O’Connell

Malcolm Nugent

Thomas Armstrong

Michael Francis Lenaghan

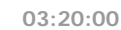
Roger James Love

Donald Kaberry

Stephen Audley

03:18:24

Brian Lawrence

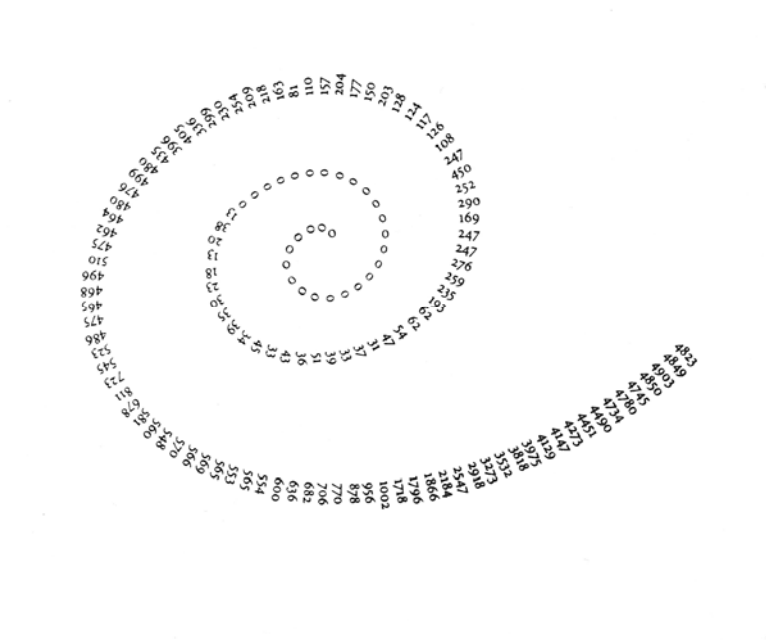


133

Law Center in Montgomery, Alabama, USA. This memorial consists of a black granite water table (11'-6" dia. X 31" h) inscribed with a famous quotation from the Civil Rights leader, Dr. Martin Luther King Jr. inscribed on a concave black granite water wall (9' h X 39'1 X 18" d). Certain events of the civil rights era and their victims are inscribed chronologically around the table-top edge of the circular space. The events span from the 1954 desegregation of the school system to 1968, with the assassination of Dr. Martin Luther King Jr. (Finkelpearl and Lin 2000: 112).

In 2005, an interior memorial wall, using interactive digital technology for its list of names and donors, called *The Wall for Tolerance*, is due for unveiling inside a newly renovated Civil Rights Memorial Centre; this work complements Maya Lin's outdoor design.

Descriptive Numbers: *The Women's Table*, 1993



03:21:36

Figure 81: Detail of inscription of years and numbers on *The Women's Table*. p. 4.37, Maya Lin *Boundaries*. Simon & Schuster, 2000.

"It is a water table to commemorate the twentieth anniversary of Yale admitting women to its undergraduate class. The use of numbers to count the women enrolled was very important."

Tony Carlos Harrison

Margaret Perry

Cecil McKnight

Anthony Gerald Burns

John McQuoid McMaster

Thomas Hughes

Thomas Oliver

David John Hutchinson

William Eric Boyd

Gary Lynch

Jim Carson

Patrick Shanaghan

Ronnie Finlay

James Woods

Thomas Donaghy

Martin O'Prey

Simon Ware

Martin Eamon Watters

Francis Crawford

Seamus Sullivan

John Hanna

Kevin Flood

Bernard O'Hagan

Erik Clarke

John Haldane

Lawrence Murchan

I am trying to pose facts and let others interpret them, trusting the viewer what to think. Obviously I've been focusing on certain information, but at the same time I'm just asking you to look at facts. *The Women's Table at Yale* is nothing but numbers. (2000: 116)

This memorial was created to remember a different kind of struggle and "battle" (Lin 2000: 4:39). The battle was over the numbers of women allowed entry into Yale University since 1873, and the twentieth anniversary of women's full admission into the Yale undergraduate college. This sculpture was the first one on campus to be dedicated to the presence of women. All other images and statues on campus were dedicated to former male professors and students.

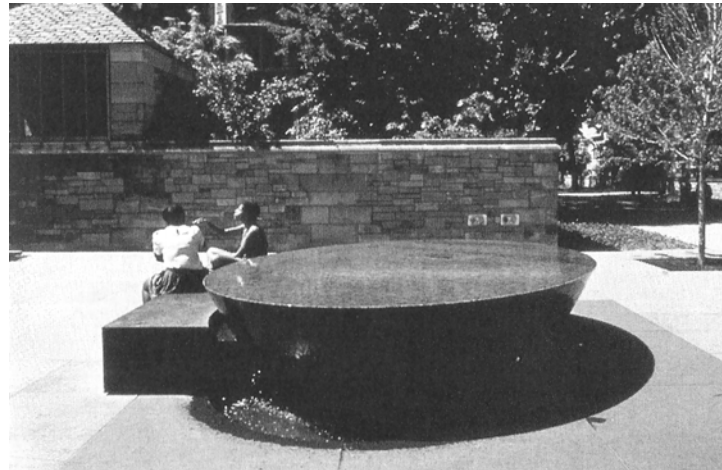


Figure 82: Granite table where people can sit and congregate
Maya Lin, *The Women's Table*, *Maya Lin Boundaries*. Simon & Schuster, 2000.

Maya Lin created a granite table where persons could sit and congregate. The table is also a water table, sited in the centre of a busy urban campus. The spiral of numbers was taken from a design of a spiral of chemicals in *Envisioning Information* by Edward Tufte, a professor at Yale, and the type font, Bembo, from the undergraduate coursework catalogue. The spiral of numbers also memorializes, more generally, the emergence of women as contributors into public modern life. The artwork leaves room for more numbers to be inscribed over the coming years, and, as such, it is a work-in-progress – with no end in the time line.

Kevin McGovern

Roger Elwood

Harry Ward

Hugh Magee

Karl Hegney

Harry Conlon

John McGuigan

Brian McCabe

Sean Anderson

Philip A. Cross

Craig Pantry

Gerald Martin Maginn

Michael Boxall

Kathleen Lundy

Colin Lundy

Billy Kingsberry

Samuel Mehaffey

Stephen John Lynn

Kenneth William Lynn

Dessie Rogers

Fergus Magee

John Lavery

Patricia Black

Frank Ryan

Robert Skey

James McCaffrey

03:23:12



Figure 83: Maya Lin, *The Women's Table*, 1993.
Maya Lin *Boundaries*. Simon & Schuster, 2000.

Plurally-Sited Memorials⁸

Lin is planning a final and very different 'plural' or 'plurally-sited' memorial⁹. Indeed, *The Vietnam Veterans' Memorial* is already a plurally-sited artwork – a wooden set-design version is regularly brought to college campuses and other sites around the country (as I witnessed on the outdoor campus of the University of Washington, in Ellensburg, September, 2001; see Saunders 2002:F7). Also, a public site is available on the internet, called *The Wall of Names* at <www.virtualwall.org>. On the website, a visitor is able to digitally experience the rubbing of a name of a loved one, through interactive technology.

In her 2000 book, *Boundaries: a visual/verbal sketchbook*, Maya Lin concludes by describing her final memorial as a plural monument at various sites, including on the internet, dedicated to the extinction of species (12:03).

Kenneth Newell
Colin Ralph Caldwell
Colm Mahon
Patrick McDonald
Robin Farmer
Thomas Gorman
Barry Watson
William Johnston
Aidan Wallace

1992

Kevin McKearney
Philip Campbell
Michael Martin
Ivor McNabney
David Boyd

David Harkness
William Gary Bleeks
Cecil James Caldwell

Robert Dunseith
John Richard McConnell

Nigel McKee
Robert Irons
Oswald Gilchrist
John McIver
Paul Moran

03:24:48

Conclusion

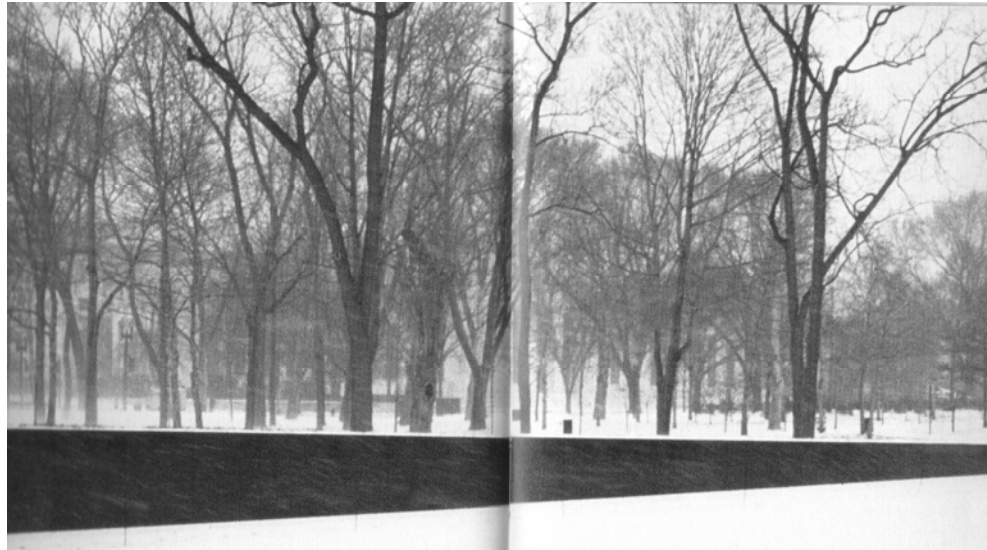


Figure 84: Maya Lin, *The Vietnam Veteran's Memorial*.
Maya Lin *Boundaries*. Simon & Schuster, 2000.

The Vietnam Veterans Memorial, 1982, was a watershed moment for the anti-heroic genre of monumental sculpture/architecture. This piece of national public art successfully reconciled a generation who were 'of bitterly divided thinking and feeling' over the USA participation in Vietnam (Scruggs and Swerdlow 29-30). Maya Lin, a designer of self-described hybrid identity (2000:5:03), treads between the disciplines of artist and architect, large-scale landscape designer and intimate worker with hand-crafted media, in her small-scale, pre-planning model-making or her detailed finish-work of the final construction. Lin has been influenced heavily by the literary genre, working at one point in collaboration with a poet¹⁰. For *The VVM*, Lin's work followed the scale, drama and structure of a Greek Tragedy in theatre and the Greek Epic -- ancient, universal cathartic public art. Her quiet, yet courageous, body of work has influenced the next generation of designers, including myself. Particularly compelling have been Lin's use of text and her sensitive detailing of the names, events or numbers on her granite memorials. She brought the world of rigorous site-conscious, conceptual public sculpture into the area of an empathic viewing in memorial art. She was not afraid to

03:26:24

Paddy Clarke

Gordon Hamill

Pat McBride

Paddy Loughran

Michael O'Dwyer

Allen Moore

Peter Magee

James Kennedy

Christy Doherty

William McManus

Jack Duffin

Joseph McManus

Kevin Barry O'Donnell

Sean O'Farrell

Peter Clancy

Daniel Patrick Vincent

Andrew Johnson

Anne Marie Smyth

James Gray

Patrick Liam McCartan

Patrick Harmon

Colleen McMurray

Terence Augustus

McConville

Peter McClements

Danny Cassidy

produce a structure which combined an engagement with tough, political issues which, at the same time, produced raw emotions. Lin's emphasis on educational or social 'healing' issues, within a conceptual minimalist aesthetic, could be seen as a part of the feminising of that sculptural oeuvre. Such poetic elasticity is part of the gains of feminist art and philosophers of the public and private. Regarding her *VVM*, the Vietnam War had been heavily contested and symbolic of two groups in the American public at odds with each other: principally shamed veterans, on the one hand, and peace protestors, on the other. Lin's design worked to bring about reconciliation, by offering an alternative national narrative to a deeply divisive social issue.

The associated nuances of *The ILM* are similar. Lin has worked with these issues under the rubric of public commemorative art and the hybrid or counter-monument. The counter or anti-monument, according to James Young, is self-effacing and commemorates, not ideals, heroes and triumphs, but issues of national uncertainty (2000:96). This case study demonstrates aspects I consider key to my *Irish Linen Memorial*: passage and intimacy in Lin's work, together with the slowing down of time which is necessary for reflection for an interactive-viewer. Participatory touch, for catharsis, is another key element in an experiential memorial. Maya Lin, in *The Women's table* at Yale, and *The Civil Rights Memorial* encourages the touching of her textual inscriptions through a veil of water. Similarly, for the sonic surround element of *The ILM* my collaborator, Thomas Fitzgerald, added the sounds of water and tears in his composition for the sonic-surround element of *The ILM*. The effects of light through the hanging linen handkerchiefs and the translucency of the material also indicate a veil of tears to touch and handle. There are particular rights of the passage for remembrance when trauma is involved. Therefore, Lin's memorials are described as similar to a book, achieving intimacy akin to the act of reading quietly by oneself. Both her *VVM* and my *ILM* have a book of names indexed, in alphabetical order, which one must look up in order to locate a particular individual on a memorial

03:28:00

Jack McKearney

Danielle Carter

Paul Butt

Thomas Casey

Michael Newman

Edward McCreery

Brendan McWilliams

Philomena Hanna

Conor Maguire

Andrew Grundy

Billy Sargent

Glen Goodman

Johnny Dignam

Gregory Burns

Aidan Starrs

Kieran Patrick Abram

Cyril Murray

Damian Shackleton

Robin Hill

Jimmy Brown

Isobel Layland

Hugh Patrick McKibben

Paul Turner

Peter McBride

Samuel Rice

Charlie Fox

panel or handkerchief. Both works demonstrate that a team of researchers must supply the factual information for the well-researched listing of names in order of chronology, within a set of historic events. As in Lin’s case study, my focus on facts enables a reader-participant to make their own judgement about the history of the violent conflict itself. While my artistic oeuvre is situated *between* sculpture and textiles/fibres, there is a hybridity between these disciplines. In Lin’s case, ‘hybrid’ refers to a memorial creation that sits between architecture, landscape architecture or earth art and sculpture.

Endnotes

¹ The page numbers in this citation also operate as a timecode which runs through Maya Lin’s 2000 book, *Boundaries*. This design detail influenced me for the remembrance ‘column of names’ layout for my thesis exegetis graphic design template.

Maya Lin states, “I consider the monuments to be true hybrids, existing between art and architecture, they have a specific need or function, yet their function is purely symbolic” (Lin 2000: 4:02-03;4:44-5).

²Lin states, “It is important to remember that I don’t come from an art background. I didn’t know who [Robert] Smithson or [Richard] Serra were when I designed the *Vietnam Veterans Memorial*. I wasn’t even aware how much the *Vietnam Veterans Memorial* had in common with the earth artists when I designed it. I can remember walking into the Whitney Museum [of American Art in New York City] and seeing one of Smithson’s *Non-sites* in 1982, and I was speechless. I’m much more tied into that aesthetic than a lot of the artists working today that are trying to push other boundaries” (Lin in conversation with Tom Finkelpearl 2000:116).

³ This was Lin’s entry number in the competition (out of 1421 entries) for *The Vietnam Veterans Memorial*.

Almost twenty years later, in 2000, reflecting back upon the controversial process which ensued (and resulted in both personal and artistic attacks) after her design was chosen, she states, “The memorial’s starkness, its being below grade, being black, and how much my age, gender, and race played a part in the controversy, we’ll never quite know. I think it is actually a miracle that the piece ever got built” (2000: 4:15).

⁴ ‘Kent State’ is a euphemism for a symbolic “great American tragedy which occurred at the height of the Vietnam War era, a period in which the nation found itself deeply divided both politically and culturally. ...[It was] a reminder of the day when the Vietnam War came home to America” (Lewis & Hensley 8).

The Kent State University incident, on 4th of May, 1970, was an incident when thirteen people were killed and nine injured. The students protested the USA’s invasion of Cambodia (which ran counter to President Nixon’s campaign pledge of ending the Vietnam War), April 1970. People gathered on the school commons, a grassy area in the middle of the campus where rallies and demonstrations were often held. That evening, a chaotic confrontation occurred between protestors and the local police. The entire Kent county and community police forces were called to duty, and Leroy Satrom, the Mayor of Kent, declared a state of emergency. The next day Ohio Governor Rhodes called in the Ohio National Guard. On the third day, 1,000 demonstrators clashed with 1,000 National Guardsmen. On the fourth day, over 3,000 civilians were involved and a ROTC building on campus had been burnt. Later, the National Guard opened fire on the demonstrators. (Lewis & Hensley 2-3)

03:29:36

- Tess Fox
- Michael Sean Macklin
- Leonard Joseph Fox
- Gerard O’Hara
- Harry Black
- Michael Anderson
- James Douglas
- David Heffer
- Sheena Campbell
- Robert Irvine
- Samuel Ward
- Michael Gilbride
- Donna Elizabeth Wilson
- Francis Burns
- Peter Orderly
- John Lovett
- Alan Corbett
- Iain R. Warnock
- Peter McCormack
- Gerard Holmes
- Pearce Jordan
- John Collett
- Malachy Carey
- Martin Lavery
- Stephen Waller

Maya Lin’s parents, who were teaching at another college campus in the same state, would have been very aware of these events. It is significant that Lin mentions this incident, so close to home, in her statement about her vague awareness of the politics of her childhood.

⁵ When the competition was held, the number was 57,000. “The official total for USA military personnel killed in Vietnam was 57,939, eight of whom were women.” Since then, the Department of Defense had added more names to its official listing and the total reaches over 58,000. Over 2.7 million Americans served and 300,000 were wounded (Scruggs and Swerdlow 16).

The jurors stated the design “was *not* a war memorial”, “a retreat to past notions of glory”. It was “a memorial to honor service” (authors italics, Scruggs and Swerdlow 65).

“Ordinary veterans” stated, “It’s not a memorial’s job to judge the rights and wrongs of Vietnam. It is a living memorial, helping to end the disgraceful attitudes towards us. The design is sensitive and simple, people-oriented. The nation must always remember the terrible price we paid for nothing.” (Scruggs and Swerdlow 99).

Lin states, “People cannot resolve that war, nor can they separate the issues, the politics, from it” (4:17).

Maya Lin also described the design in an early press conference as “I wanted to describe a journey -- a journey which would make you experience death.” Her public statement had to be mediated by the Veterans who needed to clarify that the memorial also honoured 2.7 million who served and survived. (Scruggs and Swerdlow 69)

⁶ The color choice of black had to be vigorously defended as positive and sunlit. “It took a prominent four-star general, Brigadier General George Price, who happened to be black, testifying before one of the countless subcommittee hearings and defending the color black, before the design could move forward” (Lin 2000: 4:16).

⁷ Australian cross-cultural theorist, Greg Dening, writes an inspired introduction on *The VVM* in his book *Readings/Writings* about the pain, silences, and imaginative possibilities of cross-cultural encounters, 1998. He states, “You’ll find picnickers, tourists being tourists and laughter in all of Washington’s other monuments. Not here. All the other monuments need ritual, pomp and ceremony to make their signs live. Not here. The only ritual is your visit and your reflected face” (4).

⁸ Lin made a strategic career move to not accept further memorial commissions. Her architectural practice includes a sculptural practice, large-scale outdoor public art, private homes and public institutions or other buildings.

⁹ This memorial will exist at numerous sites as well as in the “non –physical site” of the Internet which Lin acknowledges as a place where linkages, networks, monitoring and sharing occur (2000:12:03).

¹⁰ *Reading a Garden*, Cleveland Public Library 1996-8 with Tan Lin.

1993

Patrick Shields

Diarmuid Shields

Matthew Boyd

Anthony Gerard Butler

Sharon McKenna

Samuel Rock

Michael Ferguson

Martin McNamee

Julie Statham

Eugene Martin

Michael J. Beswick

Thomas Molloy

Christopher Harte

Mervyn Johnston

Reginald Williamson

Jonathan Reid

Nigel McCollum

Norman Truesdale

Robert Shaw

Lawrence Dickson

Jonathan Ball

Peter Gallagher

James McKenna

James Gerard Kelly

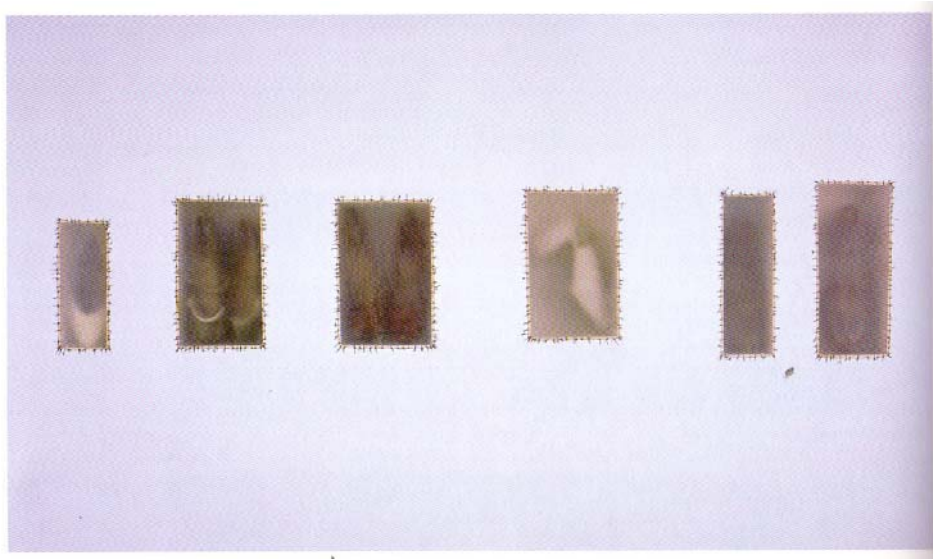
Noel Kane

03:31:12

Chapter 8

Doris Salcedo: the sculptor as secondary witness to the witness of trauma or death

Introduction



03:32:48

Figure 85: Doris Salcedo, *Atrabiliarios* (detail), 1992. Installation, Wall niches, shoes, animal fibre, surgical thread. Dimensions variable, 'Currents 92: The Absent Body', Institute of Contemporary Art, Boston. Nancy Princenthal, Carlos Basualdo & Andreas Huyssen, *Doris Salcedo*. p. 48

Colombian sculptor Doris Salcedo (b. 1958), like Maya Lin, is known for her “art on remembrance and consciousness” (Merewether 1993:44). Doris Salcedo’s sculptural installations regarding her particular emphasis on politicised ‘cross-over’ spaces interest me. This case study considers Salcedo’s exquisitely sensitive and well-made sculpture produced in the context of Colombia’s intimidatory political culture, and explores the ways it has been paradigmatic for *The Irish Linen Memorial*. Most evocative for me has been her preoccupation with ‘the juncture’ installation space. I focus on three issues in Salcedo’s practice: space, intimate touch, the process of interviewing victims of trauma, and anti-monumentality. Hers is an art practice which attempts to reconcile both victims and perpetrators of violence. In interviews with Charles Merewether and

Gerry Dalrymple

Damien Walsh

Timothy Parry

William Killen

Edward Henty

David Hugh Martin

Alan Lundy

Edward McHugh

Christopher Wren

Brendan McKenna

John Murphy

John Joseph Mulhern

John Lyness

John Randall

Brian McCallum

Kevin Pullin

Sean Lavery

Seamus Hopkins

Marie De Mogollon

James Peacock

Jim Bell

Sean Hughes

Michael Edwards

Vernon Sydney Baillie

Adrian McGovern

Jason McFarlane

Carlos Basualdo, Salcedo states that she encourages her viewer-participants to encounter spaces where there is a proximity to ‘the face of the neighbour’. Her sculptural installations explore soft, as well as hard materials: hair, skin and bone, and found furniture. Her artistic responses are distinctly anti-monument and, as such, are produced in human scale, encouraging viewers to touch the fabric, sewing or wooden sculpture, and walk among her installations. Her furniture sculptures are mis-fitted and are disabled, she states like herself, through encounters and interviews with witnesses of violent trauma. My research on Salcedo’s approach to these aspects, informed by her work in Colombian political theatre, enabled me to create further depth in both *The ILM* and my installations on the theme of “*Make do and Mend*”.



03:34:24

Figure 86: Doris Salcedo, *Untitled* 1995.

Wood, fabric, bones 257.5 x 46.5 x 33 cm ‘Currents 92: The Absent Body’,
Institute of Contemporary Art, Boston.

Nancy Princenthal, Carlos Basualdo & Andreas Huyssen, *Doris Salcedo*. p. 68

Joseph Reynolds

Paddy McMahon

Annie Bogle

John Gibson

John Desmond Frizzell

George Williamson

Gillian Williamson

Sharon McBride

Michael Morrison

Evelyn Baird

Michelle Baird

Leanne Murray

Thomas Begley

Wilma McKee

Martin Moran

Sean Fox

James Cameron

Mark Rodgers

Rory Cairns

Gerard Cairns

Karen Thompson

Steven Gerard Mullan

James Moore

Joseph McDermott

Moira Duddy

John Moyne

Salcedo situates herself in installation art, yet her artwork has a direct relationship with the consequences of the ongoing violence in Latin America, specifically in Columbia in the 1980's. Salcedo incorporates both domestic textiles and sculptural spatial concerns in her artwork, often employing non-traditional materials, such as reconfigured and restructured furniture or textiles and clothing. The body and trauma are central themes in her sculptural work. Since 1948, terror and violence is commonplace in Colombia, as the country has been involved in a lengthy civil war. Thousands have been killed each year, and one-and-a-half million Colombians are internally displaced persons (IDPs). 'Médecins Sans Frontier' describes the situation in Colombia as:

The well-being of most Colombians has been adversely affected by one thing: violence...Conflicting political aspirations are often expressed in deadly ways: Armed groups launch attacks on those they suspect of collaborating with the powers that be, and others use equally brutal methods to defend what they see as the country's established economic and industrial order. The government and the military seek to redress the balance through force of their own. But it is the civilians who suffer.¹

This situation impels some Colombian artists to be preoccupied with concepts of memory, perhaps in an attempt to reconcile both victims and perpetrators of violence, and to imagine alternative ways of living in peaceful coexistence. The Colombian situation² encapsules an experience about trauma and horror that can be valuable paradigm to the rest of the world. Sculptor Doris Salcedo's work provokes viewers to think about "their own relationship to social upheaval" and "the absence of a social contract by which the absolute value of human life" is held as an unassailable principle (Cameron 9).

In Australia, I was privileged to study with three artist-colleagues from Bogotá, Colombia³. Our inspirational dialogue and often hilarious adventures have been one of the personal highlights of my doctoral work at the University of Wollongong. Informal discussion can breed fuller engagement, so my investigations into the work of Doris Salcedo have

John Alexander Burns

Brian Woods

Sean Hagan

Alexander Scott

Paul Andrew Garrett

Brian Duffy

Robert John Todd

Robert McClay

Andrew Beacom

Ernest F. Smith

Noel Alexander Cardwell

Bridie Glennon

Daniel Blinco

03:36:00

1994

Desmond Doherty

Cormac McDermott

Arthur McDonnell

Mark Sweeney

Dominic McGlinchey

William Johnston Beacom

Sean McParland

Jack Smyth

John Haggan

Francis Joseph Brown

Gregory Pollock

been assisted by these collegiate friendships which have brought the issues in Salcedo's work more fully to life, helping me reflect upon just how her work has informed my own. Northern Ireland and Colombia share the commonality of violent civil strife, and although the political specificities and trajectories of context are widely disparate, the traumatic legacy for individual survivors of violence and their communities have similar ramifications.

The Artwork

Doris Salcedo unabashedly admits that she is as 'disabled' as her artworks are 'awkward' because of her close proximity to the extremes of abuses of political power and their terribly violent consequences, from living in Colombia. Salcedo's sculpture demonstrates a quiet quality of empathy that people seem eager to embrace. Empathy is inherent in both her work and in the patience that is needed to appreciate and view it. For empathy, touch and human scale are necessary to engage the viewer.



Figure 87: *The Widowed House*. Doris Salcedo, *La Casa Viuda 1V*, (detail) 1994. Nancy Princenthal, Carlos Basualdo & Andreas Huyssen, *Doris Salcedo*, p 111

Like Richard Serra, Salcedo is adamant that space is never neutral or de-politicized. The sensitivity to issues of the power imbalances inherent in spatial concerns is a particular acuity developed by artists who have been politicized by living in a setting of civil war and/or terrorism.

Margaret Wright

Ian Hamilton

Theresa Clinton

Samuel Victor Montgomery

Alan Smith

John McCloy

Francis Rice

Joseph McCloskey

Gerald Evans

Liam Paul Thompson

James Brown

Eric Smith

Michael Martin Brown

Thomas Douglas

Roseanne Mallon

Martin Bradley

Frederick Anthony

David Wilson

Eamond Fox

Gary Convie

Gavin Patrick McShane

Shane McArdle

Reginald McCollum

Martin Doherty

Nigel Smith

Maurice O'Kane

03:37:36

This includes artists who work from a place of acknowledging the intimate terror of domestic violence. Salcedo draws our attention to spatial issues in her installation work, such as *La Casa Viuda /The Widowed House*, 1992-95. She situates this artwork in a de-centered space, a gallery entrance or passageway, an unofficially sanctioned space. Salcedo speaks of conquering uninhabitable space in this 2000 interview with Carlos Basualdo, independent curator and critic:

I don't believe that space can be neutral. The history of wars and perhaps even history in general, is but an endless struggle to conquer space. Space is not simply a setting; it is what makes life possible. It is space that makes encounters possible. It is the site of proximity, where everything crosses over. I feel I am scattered in many different places. As a woman and a sculptor from a country like Colombia (regarded by outsiders as having a pariah status), working with victims of violence and showing my work in different places around the world, I find myself encountering extreme and contradictory positions, both on a large and small scale. That is why I think I am in a privileged position, always at a *juncture* (my italics; Salcedo in conversation with Basualdo 2000:12).

The Orphan's Tunic



Figure 88: *The Orphan's Tunic* Doris Salcedo, *Unland: The Orphan's Tunic* (detail) 1997. Nancy Princenthal, Carlos Basualdo & Andreas Huyssen, *Doris Salcedo* p 112.

Colin Craig

Brendan McCreesh

Gerald Brady

David Hamilton

Cecil James Dougherty

Adrian Joseph Rogan

Daniel Gerard McCreanor

Eamon Byrne

Patrick O'Hare

Barney Green

Malcolm Jenkinson

Trevor King

Joseph Patrick Donaghy

William Corrigan

Raymond Smallwood

Caroline Moreland

Robert Monaghan

John Bolger

Raymond Elder

Joe Bratty

David Thompson

Kathleen O'Hagan

Trelford Withers

Harry O'Neill

Martin L'Estrange

Sean Monaghan

03:39:12

Salcedo's *The Orphan's Tunic*, from a series called *Unland* (1995-98) is an example of a work created from an empathic identification with a young survivor of an horrific incident of violence. Salcedo creates the effect of a palpable presence of human grief and anguish of such a life-altering event. She encourages viewers to touch her art and beckons them to consider the possibility of another response to violence – that of human compassion for difference. The frailty of the human condition is represented by the table, approximately the size of a human body, with its re-structured legs and unsupported mid-section. Employing a painstakingly detailed drilling and sewing process, she captures a concentrated meaning through the stretching and slowing down of time. The artwork is made memorable and provocative through the use of the abject material of human hair, identified with the corporeal body, and the compelling quality of a white, translucent silk fabric. The table top is made porous, like the pores of the skin, by a multitude of miniscule 1/64 inch drill holes.



03:40:48

Figure 89: Doris Salcedo, *Unland: Audible in the Mouth*, 1998. Wood, thread, hair. 74.5 x 315 x 80 cm; Nancy Princenthal, Carlos Basualdo & Andreas Huyssen, *Doris Salcedo*. p.139. Collection, Tate Gallery, London

Martin Cahill

Sean McDermott

John O'Hanlon

Frank Kerr

Malachy Martin Clark

Noel Lyness

1995

James Seymour

Mickey Mooney

Anthony Martin Kane

Billy Elliott

Norman Harley

Paul Edward Divine

Francis Collins

Christopher Johnston

Martin McCrory

1996

Ian Lyons

Gino Gallagher

Inan Ul-haq Bashir

John Jeffries

Edward O'Brien

John Fennell

Barbara McAlorum

The joining of two different mis-fitted tables illustrate an effort in ‘making do and mending’ in the aftermath of a brutally violent forced home-invasion. Such invasions are part of the reign of terror in Colombia in which persons are kidnapped and become a part of ‘the disappeared’. Instead of using a ‘logical’ (masculine) carpentry-joinery method of re-positioning the tables back together, Salcedo sutures them with the feminine technology of sewing, invoking the memory of violence to the body which sears the mind. She has worked the greater length of the tables together with a seam of repetitive miniscule stitches of human hair, perceptible only upon close inspection, which gather more strongly in one particularly dark seam. This seam or joint then appears no more than a shadow at a distance, upon the otherwise pure, white tablecloth/table-skin. Salcedo thus makes a ritual of such obsessive sewing with an almost invisible thread, a ‘live’ part of the human body, and in the process assuages grief and leaves behind a new memory, together with a newly acquired structural strength. Such carefully constructed details add to the slowing down of time demanded from the viewer to realize the depth of Salcedo’s sculpture’s implications.

03:42:24

In a 1998 catalogue essay about Salcedo’s artwork Charles Merewether suggests:

The fitting together of the two tables is a disjointedness that both contains and exposes the disruptive element. Overcoming a traumatic experience entails not only recognition of the disjunction between seeing and knowing, but a resistance to trauma’s destructive power. (Merewether: 23)

Merewether also states that “the dominant conventions in the representation of extreme violence and remembrance in Colombia over the past fifty years” bear a kind of effect of anesthesia which Salcedo works hard to counter in her creative processes. He postulates that:

Salcedo puts on public view the traces, relics and stories of remembrance, forms of recollection which represent the repressed archive of a nation which has been silenced and

Thomas L. Sheppard

Dessie McCleery

Jerry McCabe

Frank Shannon

Michael McGoldrick

Thomas Annett

Dermot McShane

Hugh Torney

Sean Devlin

George Scott

Diarmuid O’Neill

Pat McGeown

Darren Murray

James Bradwell

Thomas Stewart

1997

Larry McCartan

Stephen Restorick

John Slane

David Templeton

Robert Hamill

Darren Bradshaw

Sean Brown

Gregory Taylor

John Morris

buried. These are stories of abandonment, the fissures, silences, and oblivion of history, but also the excesses of memory, a past to be reckoned with and a future in which to survive (Merewether: 23).

Salcedo considers her practice as bearing “witness to the witness [of an act of trauma, including a murder], a secondary witness” (Feitlowitz :1). She obtains testimonies from victims of violence, who generally live in rural, interior Colombia, and interviews them personally, so developing an artwork which honors the victim or survivor of trauma, through her immersion in the victim’s life. Drawing upon her early training in theatre (Basualdo 8), she places herself within the creative process like a Stanislavski trained Method⁵ actor, “in such a way that their [the victim of violence] experience takes precedence over my own”⁶ (Feitlowitz :1). Salcedo also uses the analogy of a detective “piecing together the scene of a crime. I became aware of all the details in their lives...there is a process of substitution. Their suffering becomes mine; the centre of that person becomes my centre and I can no longer determine where my centre actually is”⁷ (Basualdo 14). This artistic process parallels that of an actor working with the particular motives of their character, in this case the interviewee, and the specific handling of props within a stage set, in this case the found objects such as furniture and textiles⁸ used in her installation practice. “From this point of view,” Salcedo states, “the piece forms itself” (Basualdo 14).

In a 2000 interview with Carlos Basualdo, Salcedo talks about grappling with the moment of death and trauma as an artist. She describes how both her art and her sense of self are compromised, even while her empathetic plans towards another/an Other (neighbour/kith/kin/community member) are well-intentioned:

Everything that is beyond me, that I fail to grasp, that I cannot remedy or deal with, is the Other, or in the philosopher Emmanuel Levinas’ description, ‘the face of the neighbour’... [and] the Other needs me urgently, but I arrive late.⁹ I always work on the premise of that delay in arrival, which marks my

Robert Bates

Roland John Graham

David Andrew Johnston

Brian Morton

Bernaderre Martin

James Morgan

‘Brian O’Rawe

Glenn Greer

Raymond McCord

James Gerard Devlin

Billy Wright

Seamus Dillon

Edmund Treanor

03:44:00

1998

Terry Enright

Fergal McCusker

Jim Guiney

Larry Brennan

Benedict Hughes

Liam Conway

John McColgan

Brendan Campbell

Robert Dougan

Kevin Conway

Philip Allen

work with a lack of hope. It is not a question of the impossibility or immensity of the task but of my being incapable of acting effectively. I am disabled. My work is too (27).

By working in this way, Salcedo not only positions herself as Other, but she becomes Other. As she describes it, Salcedo is an artist who is not afraid of categorizing herself as dysfunctional in her art-making, even and all the while being highly articulate about her process and strategies.

Salcedo prefers her sculptures to be touched in “a passing caress”, and talks about her work as ever-changing, involving a “process of deterioration,” altered by viewer-participants themselves. Her sculptures are live creatures, inevitably subject to decline: “If we were capable of understanding this fragility implicit in life, we would be better human beings” (Basualdo 32).

Doris Salcedo’s body of work creates memorials to the dispossessed. Her use of non traditional materials counters familiar public memorial-monuments, illustrating her deep mistrust in monumentality and in the mediated memories that inform official history. According to Salcedo, traditional public monuments are the very failure of memory. By seeking to pin down a fixed, permanent version of events into a static, single meaning, official monuments privilege one way of remembering, while excluding others. Salcedo’s sculptures contain a critique of monumentality. She remains anonymous in her interviewee process with victims and places herself in her creative projects, offering testimonies of grief, anger and trauma from the people of her homeland. As Mark Seltzer points out, Salcedo’s artwork can be said to expose the hallmarks of a “wound culture” that holds a steadily visible “pathological public sphere” (qtd. by Merewether in Seltzer, 1997: 4-6; 22).

03:45:36

Damien Trainor

David Oliver Keys

Cyril Stewart

Trevor Deeney

Mark McNeill

Adrian Lamph

Ciaran Heffron

Ronan MacLochlainn

William Henry Paul

Richard Quinn

Mark Quinn

Jason Quinn

Andrew Kearney

Breda devine

Fernando Blasco Baselga

Rocio Abad Ramos

James Barker

Oran Doherty

Sean McLaughlin

Frederick White

Bryan White

Esther Gibson

Olive Hawkes

Brenda Logue

Gareth Conway

Jolene Marlow

Conclusion

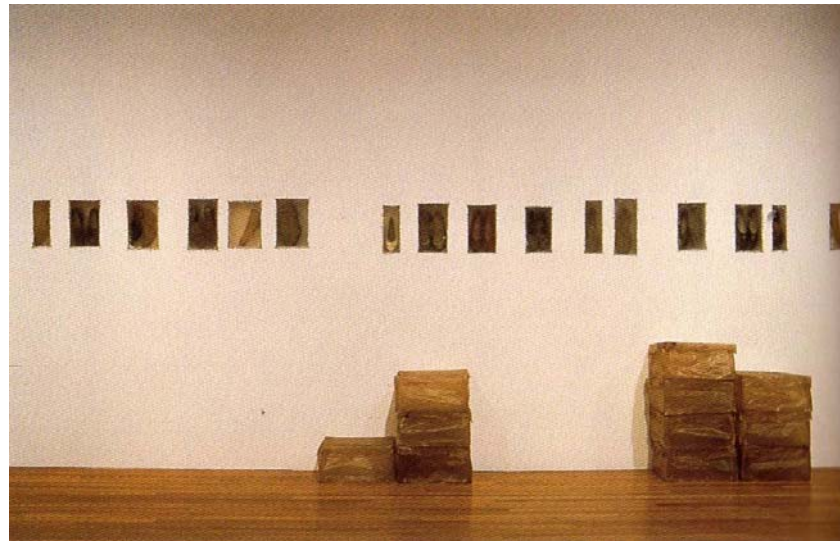


Figure 90: Doris Salcedo, *Atrabiliarios*, 1993. Wall niches, shoes, animal fibre, surgical thread. Dimensions variable. Nancy Princenthal, Carlos Basualdo & Andreas Huyssen, *Doris Salcedo*. p. 53,

Salcedo is an artist who creates objects and arrangements in space by considering certain 'juncture-moments', of extreme encounters with violence. Her sculptural creations are the offspring of a culture where terror and horror have been inherited as the norm. Salcedo's artwork, in the gallery setting, begs reflection but contradictorily necessitates a long period of unsettled viewing where the insidious after-effects of the breakdown in normative conjugal and community relations are inherent in the awkward and haunting furniture or clothing represented. Her work, however, suggests not simply trauma and disruption, but the healing and suturing of lives and communities through the painstaking, empathic labour of the intimate and domestic realm.

03:47:12

Alan Radford

Elizabeth Rush

Philomena Skelton

Veda Short

Ann McCombe

Geraldine Breslin

Aidan Galagher

Samantha McFarland

Lorraine Wilson

Julia Hughes

Deborah Anne Cartwright

Brian McCrory

Mary Grimes

Avril Monaghan

Maura Monaghan

Gary White

Sean McGrath

Billy Giles

Frank O'Reilly

Brian Service

1999

Eamon Collins

Rosemary Nelson

Frankie Curry

Brendan Joseph Fegan



03:48:48

Figure 91: Doris Salcedo, *Atrabiliarios*, (detail) 1993.

Charles Merewether, curator at the Getty Research Institute and commentator on Salcedo, cultural memory, monuments and the re-invention of modernism with an emphasis upon Latin America, claims that the notion of Colombia as a culture of violence is a symptom of a greater cultural anaesthesia. He states that violence is not simply a constitutive condition of the country, but that it should be remembered that there is an active cultural and intellectual effort involved in trying to redress the issue (23). Colombia (like Ireland/Northern Ireland) contains a:

strong substratum of Catholicism and its belief in the notion of sacrificial violence, of forgiveness and redemption as the foundation of emancipation. This produces a culture that reconciles itself to violence as the grounds for suffering and redemption (Merewether 21).

Elizabeth O'Neill

Paul Downey

Charles Bennett

2000

Richard Jameson

David McIlwaine

Andrew Robb

Martin Taylor

Edmond McCoy

Andrew Cairns

Jackie Coulter

Bobby Mahood

Samuel Rockett

Patrick Gerard Quinn

Joseph O'Connor

David Greer

Bertie Rice

Tommy English

Mark Quail

Trevor Kell

Gary Moore

James William Rockett

Ronnie Hill

2001

I suspect that Merewether's suggestion would be hotly debated in predominantly Protestant Northern Ireland. Yet, Nell McCafferty does suggest that the book, *Lost Lives*, is "an act of redemption" (frontispiece qtd. in McKittrick et al 1999). In the *ILM* and my own art practice about Ireland/Northern Ireland, by slowly embroidering its reclamation of lives, I am seeking a type of "resurrection" (O'Farrell 1 qtd. in McKittrick et al). Salcedo's work of art-as-a-witness is a reminder of the meaning and human cost of the closeness of trauma and terror in 'ordinary' civilian life, together with the normalisation of embedded fear and violence between neighbours and within society. Those kidnapped, disappeared and dead are, thus, shown to be a part of the living community, through the creative act and engagement with installation art as performative ritual. As such, Salcedo's work is consoling, as I hope my *ILM* to be. For example, Salcedo's work with weaving and sewing the miniscule fibre of hair, not unlike Narelle Jubelin's petit point needlework and my 'freckled spots' of sewn hair, is an artistic strategy to slow down time which, in turn, testifies against violence, helps define inconsolable somatic trauma and acts against the violent amnesia of the international mainstream media spectacularisation of instances of trauma and murder. In the creation of my *ILM*, and its accompanying installations on 'Mending', I share with Salcedo an interest in commemorating how the domestic environment shatters with political violence in the greater community. In creatively acknowledging and remembering re-configured daily routines, the chance to grieve and heal can begin occur. In Salcedo's oeuvre, the intimate and invisible stake claim to space in an installation practice discourse which services the humanity of the general public interest.

03:50:24

George Legge

Adrian Porter

Trevor Lowry

Grahame Edward Marks

Christopher O'Kane

Endnotes

¹ Médecins Sans Frontières (MSF) is an international humanitarian aid organization.

² Colombian violence escalated during the 1990s, partly because of the rise in the cocaine trade. The government is unable to fully manage rural areas which become dominated by guerrillas and paramilitary armies.

³ I am indebted to much dialogue with my feminist colleagues also studying postgraduate work at the University of Wollongong, 2002 - 4: Marta Cabrera, PhD

Cultural Studies, jeweller Luz Hincapé, MA English Literature, and painter Maria Peña, MCA, (although, unfortunately, I have yet to accomplish conversational Spanish).

⁴ see section titled 'The Tactile Unconscious' which references theorist Julia Kristeva in Diana Wood Conroy's unpublished University of Wollongong thesis (1995: 139-147)

⁵ Konstantin Stanislavski, director of the Moscow Art Theater, wrote *An Actor Prepares*, published in English, 1936. The Stanislavski Method of acting emphasizes an individualized, psychological approach to acting; called "The Method" it required a performer to draw on his or her own self, on experiences, memories, and emotions to inform a characterization and shape how a character might speak or move. Characters were thus shown to have a complex inner life. The Stanislavski Method was popularised during the post World War II era. (<http://www.moderntimes.com/palace/method.htm>), accessed March 27 2003.

⁶ Salcedo explains that, "Primo Levi teaches us that each extreme experience imposes extreme limits on the individuals who live through it – victims as well as victimizers. Absolute situations are very complex, and it is precisely within that complexity that we find what it is to be human. In bearing witness to inhumanity we learn to recognize humanity" (Salcedo qtd. in Feitlowitz 1)

Because my *Irish Linen Memorial* deals with commemorating both victims and perpetrators of violence (who are themselves victims in death) I am circumspect about and careful with the use of the word 'victim'.

03:52:00

⁷ Salcedo states, "It was in the Colombian theatre of that time [approx. late 1970s], with its political overtones, that my interest in art and politics came together" (Salcedo qtd. in Basualdo 8)

⁸ Salcedo's installation, *La Casa Viuda II*, (*The Widowed House*), 1992 – 95, works specifically with household furniture altered in various ways, such as with poured concrete in the cupboards, and fabric, metal, such as zippers, lace and bone inserted in disturbingly awkward places.

Conclusion

The Irish Linen Memorial (The ILM) is a distinctive artistic production which is primarily explained in terms of material culture in this scholarly exegesis, entitled *An Intimate Monument: (re)narrating the troubles in Northern Ireland*. My research study on *The ILM* demonstrates how this public artwork-installation is contextualised as a counter-monument and an artistic intervention that acts as a 'modest witness', in Donna Haraway's words (45). Two personal art installations explore the subjective experience of distressing loss: *'Excavation of Being at Rest: Make Do and Mend'*, 2004, and *'Mending'*, 2005. These accompanying artworks illustrate how the intimate 'art of memory' overlaps with public art of commemoration. This creative work references archaeology, together with funerary ritual, textiles theory, and the overlap of public and personal narratives: research underpinned by Diana Wood Conroy's scholarship. In this doctorate project, creating art in the between the public and private is a part of a concerted feminist effort to address the 'excluded middle' of recently intersecting and dissolving binary divisions, as explained by feminist philosopher Elisabeth Grosz (xvi). *The ILM* is a commemorative anti-violence sculpture; a mobile material counter-monument.

The Irish Linen Memorial has been created and exhibited in countries of the Irish Diaspora – the USA, Canada and Australia. It creates a space in which to (re)imagine the honouring of a plurality of difference in the divided community of contemporary Northern Ireland after 'the troubles'. As such, the creation of this memorial about Irish history contributes to contemporary art, based in identity politics and postcolonial text/textiles.

The complex socio-political circumstances, which have produced the death toll of names, are outlined in chapter two. This chapter gives a background to the troubles through new definitions of community according to Benedict Anderson (15), a feminist (re)imaging of citizenship and ethnic identity politics, such as with sociologist Elisabeth Porter on location and 'plurality'(36); O'Leary and McGarry on 'antagonism' (40) and historian Donald Akenson on 'intolerance'(1988) and 'hatred-maintenance systems' (2004). This contextual chapter on Northern Ireland history is thus developed as the situation in N.I has been so complex and is in a state of flux. The memorial is also controversial by its listing of the names of those killed according to the time they died: Protestants and Catholics, victims and perpetrators appear side-by-side. The memorial achieves the visual recognition of a parity of esteem between persons killed and their grieving loved ones, through a reordering of non-hierarchical relationships. Theorists Floya Anthias and Nira Yuval-Davis, on women and

ethnicity in places of violent conflict, assist in contextualising ideas of horizontal alliances across division (57). *The ILM* works against a static narration of consociation of the living to include honouring the lineage of one's own neighbourhood dead as well as 'the dead of the other side'. This informative background chapter is an overview to the creative work, putting in context 'soft-power' political dynamics appropriate to a needlework project of white linen.



Figure 92: Seed, shuttle and damask linen. *Flax to Fabric: The Story of Irish Linen*, Brenda Collins. An Irish Linen Centre & Lisburn Museum Publication, 1994. p.35.

Chapter three describes the symbolic, poetic and historic reasons for the choice of linen as an Irish/Northern Irish memorial. Following postcolonial trade and textiles theorists Paul Sharrad, literary theorist, and Diana Wood Conroy, based in archaeology, I describe linen as a part of the material culture and trade history of Northern Ireland. Outlined are the specifics of flax farming and linen manufacture as central to the settlement and colonisation of (all) peoples in the North of Ireland, since the mid to late 1600s. Small rural flax farms, bleaching greens and the accompanying processes of scutching, spinning and weaving linen are central to northern Irish history and, therefore, mythology. In the eighteenth and nineteenth century, linen signalled a civilised domestic life for upwardly mobile Protestants and Catholics. I have included a biography of Saidie Patterson, weaver, lace-maker and the first female textile unionist in Belfast whose activism crossed-over into peacemaking in working-class communities marked by sectarian violence in the 1970s and 1980s. Her life's work illustrates the intersection and metaphoric appeal between the making and care of textiles, and the wear and tear on the social fabric, following the work of theorist Dorothy Jones (45). Quality linen domestic goods became part of a positive Irish identity and were integrated into Irish storytelling. A poetic example about linen bed-sheets, by Seamus Heaney in memory of his mother, is included in chapter three. As such, the importance of flax farming and the linen textiles industry was closely associated with women and family life. A 'pieced-together' fabric memorial, speckled with spotted locks of Irish hair, symbolically embodies the memory of the political, social and personal ruptures in N.I. Linen's fine technical properties have been an iconic emblem of pride to both the Protestant and Catholic Irish people around the world, from the success of the Industrial Revolution to the present day.

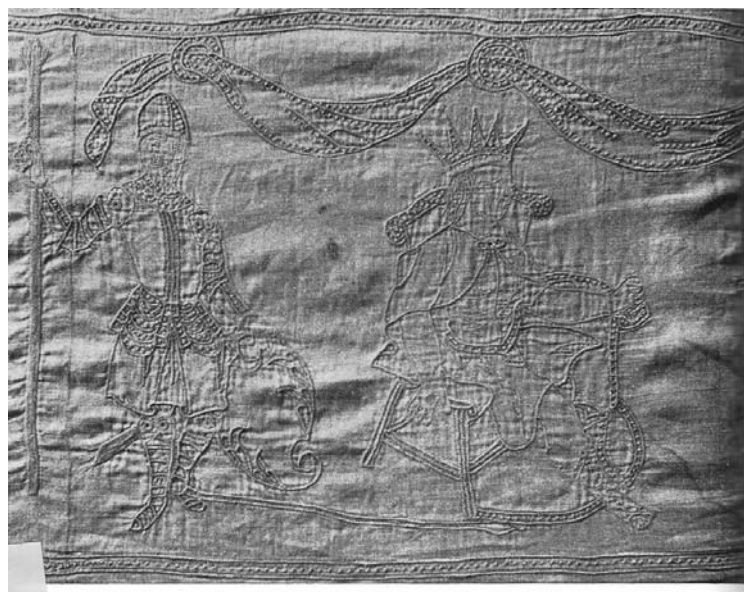


Figure 93: example of Irish traditional Mountmellick embroidered bed cover (detail): the wide border 35cm
Biblical and historic characters. Made in Westport, Co Mayo about 1830; completed during the long voyage to Australia in 1850.
A Collection in Australia, Ref #55.

Continuing this emphasis, Chapter four outlines moveable or performative public art in fabric/textiles through the lens of feminist-artists Judy Chicago, Elizabeth Cameron Dalman, Janis Jefferies, Suzanne Lacy, folklorist Linda Pershing (1993: 327-57 and 1996) and historian Joan Wallach Scott (2002:1-23). Describing tactics of collaboration by women's cooperatives such as '*Women in Black*,' the discussion foregrounds art which uses needlework and narrative as group political protest. Textile techniques offer a significant artistic strategy for highlighting and mobilising women's issues in the greater political arena, through textiles' long association with personal relationships. When the juxtaposition of needlework and architecture occurs, as I discovered in researching Justine Merritt's *The Ribbon Round the Pentagon*, the binary opposition of the male/female symbolism too-readily is judged in conservative gendered terms. Such a reading can make for a dismissal or erasure of the seriousness of a 'female' fabric creation. Yet, I argue, underpinned by theorists Gloria Orenstein and Linda Pershing, that performative community-arts rituals with cloth are important as catalysts for social change, developing a public voice for women's concerns through active, non-confrontational role-modeling. While needleworked projects may seem inherently conservative (referencing Victorian-era, moral colonialist values, as *The Ribbon* project lead by self-identified Christian mother Justine Merritt), the subtext is, at the same time, simultaneously critical of the social order. As Joan W. Scott or Carole Gilligan suggest, certain feminist women's concerns are inter-related with those of (a more just and sustainable) society. This chapter demonstrates how public needlework projects by women promote processes such as care giving, the maintenance of interconnected relationships (including kinship) and activate female leadership, such as in Suzanne Lacy's *The Crystal Quilt*. The discussion in chapter four provides models for *The ILM* creation through other artists' monumental textile-based projects which have involved commemoration and anti-violence, putting in context women and artists working for the possibility of peace and reconciliation in Northern Ireland. Research in chapter four also examines the technique of 'drawnwork' and/or invisible mending with hair as important textiles strategies that, ironically, work against amnesia, silence and erasure in an age of the media spectacularisation of trauma.



Figure 94: Quilts made by civilian internees of Changi Gaol:
 one with a message for the Nipponese soldiers 134x165cm (53x65ins) and
 another message for the Australian soldiers 130x203cm (51x80ins)
 Collection Australian War Memorial, Canberra.
Australian Quilt Heritage Margaret Rolfe, J B Fairfax Press Pty Ltd., 1998. p. 77.

In reviewing these case studies, my exegesis demonstrates that textiles practices (feminised in the nineteenth century, according to Rosita Parker), continue to be denigrated as conceptually lightweight as the fabric with which the artists work. For example, commemorative group fabric projects can be interpreted as marginal when ‘performed’ in specific and obvious juxtaposition with an architectural structure: *around* The Pentagon, or *inside* a structure, such as The Crystal Court designed by Philip Johnson. So, Judy Chicago’s tactic of waiting twenty-three years for *The Dinner Party* (created in the decorative crafts of embroidery and ceramics, 1979) to be housed within a mainstream institution, The Brooklyn Museum of Art in New York City (2002), and not a women’s museum, has proven effective for its serious acceptance as simply ‘a monumental work of art’. *The ILM* has been described by critic Meredith Hinchliffe of *The Canberra Times*, February 2004, as “poignant and moving and a forceful, though gentle, reminder of the personal tragedies and futility of war.” My hope is that, like *The Dinner Party*, *The ILM* may achieve similar longevity and historical significance.

The detailed examination of Narelle Jubelin in chapter five illustrates particular strategies of politics, identity and intimacy. Jubelin's unusual oeuvre has gained widespread art-world acceptance since Australia's bicentenary in 1988. As an artist, she juxtaposes petit point needlework with literary references, sculptural assemblage and an architectonic installation practice. Her work bears concern for the erasure of women's achievements; she asks her audience to reconsider the body, the erotic or touch in academic theoretical circles; her technical processes reference 'time' and its intersection with photographic reproduction. Jubelin's artwork offers thoughtful comment about the circulation of ideas through material culture or craft, throughout the colonial and postcolonial periods. This case study demonstrates the recent acceptance and general applicability of textiles as a significant medium for intellectual socio-political discourse, especially critiques of cross-cultural trade, production and consumption.

Chapter eight highlights a particular emphasis on 'juncture space' and art that attempts to reconcile both victims and perpetrators of violence. Doris Salcedo's sculptural installations explore soft, as well as hard, materials: hair, skin and bone as well as found furniture. Her artistic responses to a violent political society in Colombia are distinctly anti-monument and, as such, are produced in human scale; viewers may touch the fabric or wooden sculpture, and to interact with her installations. In interviews with Charles Merewether and/or Carlos Basualdo, Salcedo is shown to create quiet, empathetic viewing conditions, on the one hand, while on the other hand, encouraging her viewer-participants to encounter spaces where there is a proximity to 'the face of the neighbour' (Emanuel Levinas); Salcedo's artistic oeuvre is based in politicised 'cross-over' spaces. Her furniture sculptures are deliberately incorrectly reconfigured as a result of the artist's encounters/interviews with witnesses of violent trauma. Salcedo's approach to the traumatic content with her installation furniture, informed by her work in political theatre, influenced me to create further depth in both *The ILM* and my installations on the theme of "*Make do and Mend*".

In the chapters two, five and eight are the case studies Kathy Pendergrast, Narelle Jubelin, and Doris Salcedo, all contemporary artists who work in the soft medium of textiles as well as architectonic installation or sculpture. Each artist is from countries peripheral (Ireland/Northern Ireland, Australia or Colombia) to the central colonising powers of the USA or Britain.

The chapter six case study of USA sculptor Richard Serra is crucial to the concerns of the thesis. His work stands in stark contrast to the lighter weight fabric artworks described in the other chapters. His steel work *Tilted Arc*, was produced as a national USA monument in the oeuvre of materialist, conceptual minimalism. This sculpture exploited the use of site-specific art to expose an underlying social issue of “What constitutes a fully democratised national public space where persons from all walks of life can come together?” Serra’s gutsy body of work, – leaning angled or torqued walls of thick steel –, beseeches the viewer-participant to engage in a heightened state of awareness, through an experiential analysis of space and time. My research indicated that the conditions of Serra’s public sculpture, *Tilted Arc*, 1979 – 89, such as slowing down time and the requirement of persons to transverse a vast emptiness of plaza hardscape (courageous awareness, reflective time to process, and being alone/encountering others in a state of aloneness) are not dissimilar to aspects a visitor-viewer would encounter/or require when viewing-experiencing a very different counter-monument in another context, such as *The ILM*. Serra’s artwork’s subsequent removal was a part of this case study, which informs concerns for exhibiting my memorial in a politically divisive context. The chapter six research on Serra gave me an understanding of the violence inherent in conceptually rigorous, materially-based ‘publicness’ of site sculpture – especially when conservative factions of the state or members of the public, who prefer a facile interaction with art, are at play. This research is a reminder that real public space has diminished since the late 1990s and the relevance of permanent site-specificity has changed. The Serra research underlines how visual imaginings and public constructions are better as mobile forms of art in 2005, rather than fixed and monumental constructions.

A further USA case study explores the different dimensions of the public memorial in chapter seven. I have sought to demonstrate how Maya Lin’s most illustrious *Vietnam Veterans Memorial (The VVM)*, 1982, is a post-modern counter-monument, following the research of James Young, Andreas Huyssen and Caroline Wiedmer. *The VVM* was created after a period of national denial and insecurity in the USA about the losses sustained in that war, 1959 - 75. I argue that this memorial draws upon the architecture of the ancient Greek theatre and the role of Greek dramatic tragedy in the community. As such, *The VVM* offers a cathartic role for the general public beyond the specific issues of grief for veterans and their loved ones. A set-design and internet website version of the memorial makes *The VVM* plurally-sited in various locations and in virtual space. Lin has taken on such developments as positive adjuncts, which have influenced her recent commemorative art, such as a monument to the extinction of species. My study emphasises her distinctive visual language, demonstrating how Lin creates the intimacy ‘of the reading of a book’ for the viewer within architectonic space (a passage) or form (a table), with commemorative inscriptions in reflective granite and a flowing water element. I found that her sensitive approach to site (akin to a landscape architect, or to artist Robert Smithson who she cites as an influence) and her personal background based in the crafts (small metals, ceramics and macramé) have

influenced what she terms the creation of 'hybrid monuments'. Lin's poetic, minimalist aesthetic is foregrounded by her conceptual interests in issues of educational value, significant to social healing. Specific issues in Lin's practice have been reconciliation for disgraced Vietnam War veterans within mainstream society, civil rights achievements, equality for women in education at Yale, and concern for the environment. Lin has worked with these four issues under the rubric of public commemorative art and the hybrid or counter-monument. She continues her private and public commissions with the assistance of her small architectural practice.

Main Artistic Findings in relation to *The ILM* and *Mending*:

1.) An awareness of space and time is influenced by non-object oriented sculpture has informed the making of my *ILM*. Together with this, I have chosen to concern myself with artists who understand that space is never de-politicised. With these sculptors' interest in space, is the issue of *site* and the new millennium state of a pathological or melancholic public sphere, according to Judith Butler, 2000, or Charles Merewether, 1997. Three artists in the thesis, Lin, Serra and Salcedo focus on the aspect of *passage* in their work and the slowing down of time for the effect of *intimate* reflection for the interactive viewer. My case study of Serra focussed on a work of national significance that had the qualities of a postmodern monument in James Young's sense. *Tilted Arc* was a wall/barrier but not-a-wall/barrier and, as such, became a focal point for an encounter of between people of differently perceived political backgrounds, destabilising the 'establishment' implications of its public site. James Young states that conceptual art and ironic self-effacing installations must remain answerable to the needs of art/aesthetics, political memory and official history (7). Qualities of materialism in conceptual minimalism and perceptual aspects of space are also indicated in references to sculptor Robert Irwin and theorist Douglas Crimp in chapter one. In my case studies of two artists with different approaches to the viewer's experience of site, Richard Serra and Maya Lin, I argue that Lin and Serra share sensitivity in outlook, a family background with immigrant parents, and a conceptual rigour in developing public art which is challenging for the viewer. Each artist's lengthy and highly contested public administrative process illustrated the foibles of sculptures placed on national land. As with Serra, my case study on Doris Salcedo demonstrated the compelling concerns of engaging with a chiasmatic juncture of a crossover space within one's artistic oeuvre. My investigations into the above areas of influence have been integrated into my final configuration of *The ILM*, and '*Mending*', 2005.

2.) My artistic practice prioritises the intimacy of 'touch' over the visibility of 'the gaze'. This theme is connected with how linen is connected with the domestic, the everyday and ritual or religious celebrations (across both Catholicism and Protestantism), about the sacredness of life and the body. Therefore, when fabric is used for a memorial to persons killed unexpectedly, for example, from bomb blasts, as in *The ILM*, the profanity

of the violence is more direct. As artist Salcedo would agree, hostility and bloodshed causes a disjuncture in humane social contracts between people about the respect for life and ongoing civil interrelationships as fragile. Her use of textiles as skin emphasises touch, and her use of hair – the corporeal body. According to theorist Sarat Maharaj, when textiles are used in installation art, they are an ‘Undecidable’, in the use of the term by Jacques Derrida, and mercurial, as demonstrated in my doctoral art practice. Maharaj (chapter four) emphasises that textiles connote the sensual body, the maternal, the home, and a quality of warmth. Therefore, textiles also signal the opposite: the dislocation and displacement of the migrant and the invisible or secret life of those deemed ‘untouchable’ (by proximity, those we deny ‘citizenship in our group’ as unlike oneself). Such implications are appropriate for an *Irish Linen Memorial* to the untimely deaths of *all* persons who ‘do not belong’ (to one another’s community) or do not belong because they are a reminder of further intimidation and continued terror/violence. *The NAMES Quilt* to HIV victims, referenced in chapter four, is a memorial to a formerly pariah or marginalised group within society (gay men), the subtext of which implicated everyone in society as ‘at risk’ and in need of public healing and grief. The associated nuances of *The ILM* are comparable. Participatory touch is a key element in a number of these memorials. I have discussed how Maya Lin, in *The Women’s Table* at Yale and *The Civil Rights Memorial*, encourages the touching of her textual inscriptions through a veil of water. Similarly, my collaborator, Thomas Fitzgerald added the sounds of water and tears in his composition. Hanging linen handkerchiefs and the effects of light through the translucency of the material also indicates a veil of tears to touch and handle. Narelle Jubelin reminds us visually, through the minutia of her series of petit point of photographic reproductions or of text, about the slow time-based processes of hand crafting to produce visual images. The importance of touch is in the time it takes for reflection and pausing. This is necessary for the practice of remembrance when trauma is involved, as in *The ILM*.

3.) Diana Wood Conroy theoretically separates the contemporary art historical positionings of *intimate* semiotic textiles (with psychological or subversive political subtexts) from *public* tapestry art (narratives of history). She dwells on the importance of explanatory texts and literary references. Her readings of the work of Narelle Jubelin demonstrate intertextuality as a key element in Jubelin’s installation practice: in 1993, the use of texts about needlework techniques from the last century, and in 2004, Jubelin’s increased postcolonial feminist literary leanings as shown in her lengthy titles which even include footnotes. *The ILM* is always exhibited with its accompanying text, the *Lost Lives* book of names. My preoccupation with the written word is illustrated in the case studies chosen. Both Serra and Lin are preoccupied with words. In Serra’s case, action verbs (as seen in his early work and films) are important to his sculptural ‘chiasma’ spaces. Lin’s memorials are described as similar to a book, even achieving a similar degree of intimacy of the act of reading quietly by oneself. Her work demonstrates the need for a team of researchers for the appropriate information factual information for the

listing of names, numbers, and historic events. As in Lin's case study, my focus on facts enables a reader-participant to make their own judgement about the history of the violent conflict. In the thesis, poet Seamus Heaney demonstrates the vacillation of the Northern Irish mind as divided or bridging between inherited British and Irish cultural peculiarities; these take on a serious, almost paranoid, significance in the context of the normalisation of community/societal violence, especially during conservative times politically, like the mid-1980s. In chapter six, I make the comparison between Serra and Heaney who were both preoccupied with the static quality of public political life during the late 1970s, early 1980s; Serra created a work called *Terminal* and Heaney a poem called *Terminus*. Each title connotes something mortal, extremely lethal and/or at 'the end of the line' yet, each artist in his creation actually set out to investigate the underlying conditions of terminal/terminus. While Salcedo does not work with text, her interviews with victims of violent acts suggest an active research and oral history component. Therefore, Salcedo also examines 'extreme' limitations: violence. 'Absolute' situations, such as those in Northern Ireland or Colombia, are complex for both victims and victimisers yet can be the fraught context for bearing witness and recording what it is to be human/humane.

Main Conceptual or Theoretical Findings in relation to the Creative Project:

Firstly, through research for *An Intimate Monument: The Irish Linen Memorial*, my artwork has benefited from new knowledge, most significantly in the fabric arts. Discoveries informed by postcolonial theory in engagement with debates about nationalism, trade and the migrant condition were cited by the following literary theorists, mainly Ann Collett, Dorothy Jones and Paul Sharrad. The attentiveness of the colonial circulation of material culture was evident in my chapter three analysis of the linen industry in N.I. as impacted by the conflict of the American Civil War. Political dialogue about ethnic and cultural identity in Northern Ireland has long been terminally oppositional and dichotomised between Protestants and Catholics. The intention in my creative work is to subvert embedded positions through a creative project, which remembers those killed, and references the futility of intolerance and murdering one another. Therefore, my memorial was created as flexible and lightweight, reflective of light, attentive to architectonic space and patterns of airflow or acoustics.

Secondly, the binary opposition between needlework in the fabric/textile arts, historically gendered female 'domestic craft', and sculpture-installation art, historically gendered as male and 'high art' has been a central investigation. The oppositional positioning of these concerns was typical in modernism and only new research in the last decade, by such theorists as Anna Chave, has served to dissolve the tiresome hierarchy. Therefore, my practical creations, conceptual direction and underlying gender-politics of my artwork may have been categorised as either 'objective' or autobiographical. This 2005 doctoral presentation and research has engaged a reinterpretation of my artistic oeuvre as situated *within and between* monumental, minimalist

sculpture and the more fragile art of textiles/fibres. The development of my doctorate portfolio of artwork has benefited by the recent flexibility or hybridity between these disciplines. I see this elasticity as part of the gains of feminist postcolonial politics and a newly reflexive self-consciousness of artists, especially in the peripheral countries of Australia and Northern Ireland, to contextualise their practice within the broader arena of the humanities and politics. Although still fraught by the unequal power dynamics of their respectively gendered histories, the fields of public sculpture or tapestry (male) and intimate needlework/semiotic textiles (female), have lost their relation of rigid juxtapositions, enabling fresh interdisciplinary dialogue. This emerging flexibility within and between each discipline has facilitated a new suppleness in my artistic oeuvre, as reflected in the major creative project, *The ILM* and the minor works, 'Mending', 2005, or 'Being at Rest: Make Do and Mend', 2004.



Figure 95: *The ILM* entrance corridor: braided rope made by Lan (Loretta) Lu.
Faculty of Creative Arts, University of Wollongong
Thesis exhibition, February, 2005.
model: Bodie O'Dell; photo Sean Maguire.

Thirdly, my research has demonstrated the substantive inquiry into a long-term creative project of commemoration. This makes my creative project influenced by new developments in cultural history associated with memory studies and postcolonial debates on anti-monumentation. Important theorists spanning memory and memorials, to whom I have referred, are: James Young, Andreas Huyssen, Caroline Wiedmer; Joy Damousi and Donna Haraway on cultural history; Peggy Phelan and Jill Bennett on memory; and Simon Critchley, Charles Merewether, Judith Butler about shifts in the public sphere. In this research, rather than centre on the broader significance of counter-monuments and their contemporary role, I investigated the practical questions of an installation artist, “How to construct an effective monument which serves as a place to grieve those missing or killed from a traumatic act of violence, yet, at the same time, also is a place which allows for persons of difference to come together, if only for a moment, to honour one another?” My most rewarding findings, in this regard, were taken primarily from case studies on Serra’s *Tilted Arc* on space and on Lin’s *VVM*, together with The Vietnam Veterans Association, on a memorial narrative created by the chronological listing of the names of those killed. I found that a memorial to death from trauma can be terrifying, and to embark on an experiential mourning journey alone, through an artistic creation, can feel almost annihilating! Therefore, I have found that the following elements as a necessary part of the work: 1) a passage with a feeling of privacy to read individual names; 2) time for reflection to take the journey; 3) the courage of the individual visitor to go into the unknown place of death alone; 4) the necessity for the act of touch (whether on stone or fabric) to mediate a feeling of aloneness. Fourthly, I discovered that the human voice can be a substitute for touch and can mediate the feeling of aloneness, encouraging the taking of the journey into the unknown. Therefore, my work with the composer was a crucial collaboration for *The ILM*: music carries the human voice. Upon collaborative discussions, Fitzgerald inserted sound clips, of the reading of names, in Belfast accents, into his collaged piece, *The Seeming Insanity of Forgiveness*. The calling aloud of the names, in a sense, calls into being the person who has passed on, for a moment in time. In researching *The VVM* by Lin, the addition of the bronze figurative statue at the entrance of the memorial serves the purpose of mediating a feeling of aloneness and acts as a reminder of touch also important to textiles. My collaboration with three Mirramu Dance Company practitioners served a similarly contextual role, symbolically explaining the uses and care of fabric or handkerchiefs. With this theme, the book *Lost Lives* has served as an important reference, for it is also a mobile and intimate monument in itself. Also, the Salcedo and Jubelin case studies illustrated to me the significance and effectiveness of installation work that circulates internationally, *rather than public art*, to offer important critiques of monumentality and nationalisms/national identity.

Finally, the socio-political conceptual approaches and metaphoric associations of *The ILM* revolve around sustaining persons and community(ies) through an understanding of difference(s). For example, the semiotic potential of cloth for a well-functioning society is referenced by literary theorist, Dorothy Jones. My analysis of Merritt’s *Ribbon Round the Pentagon* illustrated the weak position of a public needlework project for political

activism and yet, its success comes in terms of its processes of community collaboration and as a performative public ritual. In my creative project, the interdisciplinary overlap between sculpture and textiles is mediated by an inter-related reinvigorated philosophical debate on the public and the private. In the last decade, their historically-gendered positionings have diminished in impact.

My creative project has had extensive printing, embroidery, sewing, tatting, braiding and installation–construction processes (see small accompanying art catalogue booklet for full credits). The full recognition of the achievements of women, feminist or sensitive men and artists as full participants in public life/citizenship is an important part of the sustainability of a rewarding, rich and caring (non-violent) community life. This argument is underpinned by theorists Floya Anthias and Nira Yuval-Davis, Elizabeth Grosz and Joan Wallach Scott. Peace activist, Betty Reardon and former Irish president, Mary Robinson and Irish poet laureate, Seamus Heaney, are cited for their poetic reflections on the commemoration of the contributions or the leadership potential of women. Within this subject, textiles remain a focus – symbolic of the loving maintenance of interconnections, extended family and sustainable community systems.



Figure 96: *The Irish Linen Memorial*, Thesis exhibition, February, 2005

- hundreds of handkerchiefs, printed with ten names each, approximately 12 inches square
- grid configuration with cotton strips; approximately 2ft H off of the floor in a slight slope

Faculty of Creative Arts, University of Wollongong

photo Sean Maguire.

My intimate monument: *The Irish Linen Memorial* had a multi-dimensional and interdisciplinary collaboration, 2002 – 4, with Elizabeth Cameron Dalman, choreographer-dancer, and an original musical composition – a sonic-surround element (including intercultural ‘chants for the dead’) with Thomas Fitzgerald, composer, both Australian practitioners from the University of Wollongong. In totality, my exegesis translates reinvigorated philosophical debate about public/private and fresh material culture research on sculpture and textiles into restorative feminist (re)imaginings in the aftermath of sectarian violence, to the memory of the troubles and to those individual *Lives Lost* in Northern Ireland. To conclude, my research places *An Intimate Monument: The Irish Linen Memorial* as an artistic (re)imagining which honours a ‘parity of esteem’ to underpin suggested new models of citizenship within the public sphere in a Northern Ireland emerging from entrenched violent conflict after the troubles.

Postscript: The Influence of my personal journey:

My personal journey, which underpins this doctorate body of artwork, constitutes my art school training with a major in sculpture, and subsequent ten-year career of site-specific installation practice, mainly outdoors. My focus since 1991, was on creating ‘art as a living system’. In 2005, I am preoccupied with ‘art about death’ as a part of lived experience for sustainable, non-violent communities. In the 1990s, my art practice was concerned with the sustainability of the environment through the use of non-aggregate materialism. For example, the compression of natural fibres to build sculptures incorporating walls was my favoured construction technique (such compression and dissolution processes also relate to pathos and memory).

My early private life included an intense period of female socialisation at a Canadian upper-middle class girls’ school, (which included three years of training in home economics). Sometime later, I engaged in ‘working class’ technical training: rough, large-scale carpentry in the commercial building trades with The United Brotherhood of Carpenters and Joiners; this supplemented my casual labour as an architect’s hand in design/build/renovate situations. Since I was young, a third area of interest, which influences my creative practice, was literature as studied primarily through creative drama, poetry and oration. This aspect of my background explains my disposition towards the links between fabric arts and text, narration and (primarily women’s) oral history or story-telling. The power of such interconnected threads is represented in the making of *The ILM* and, also stem from my ethnic heritage, an Irish contemporary visual culture inclination towards the written word. The (re)imagining of history through my creative project of a listing of the names, is given another layer with the time code in this exegesis layout which represents the length of time it takes for an oral reading of the roll call of those killed over the years. I think Seamus Heaney, who is quoted throughout the thesis, might approve!

In 2000, after returning to Belfast, for the first time as an adult and Visiting Artist, a personal physical-emotional-financial crisis in my life ensued. This prompted being creatively stimulated by the terrifying subject matter of all those *Lost Lives* cut short by trauma. The strain of my early emigration (and broken kinship or community ties) had been re-ignited by the 1999 Horsehead International project (Seattle-Belfast), together with a type of survivor's guilt of being the recipient of an 'ordinary' childhood in peaceful and multi-cultural, religiously-diverse British Columbia, Canada. So, I am part of the Irish Diaspora to Canada, the east coast of the USA, Australia and Britain (the latter is not included as a personal destination, yet it can be assumed). During the making of this memorial and the '*Mending*' series, I would sometimes feel myself empathetically, emotively grappling with nervousness about the moment of violent death, as such are the associations when one takes on with a project of 'naming' individual lives. Also, at other times, I would feel terribly alone with the pared-down utilitarianism of my project: a simple grid of linen and printed names; the poetics of the mourning processes of embroidering, tatting, sewing and how the linen handkerchiefs could act to collect tears, mask sorrowful breathing and wipe away bodily fluids or help apply soothing oils – these healing aspects would escape or entrap me, not unlike a trauma victim myself. After exhibition or presentation processes, some visitors would recount to me their own stories of trauma, activated by the artwork and adding to an associated oral history. During the larger project, my mind could wander with obsessively re-counting what life would have been like if I had grown up, or still lived, in north Belfast and the overlap between public and domestic violence. It is interesting to remember that my first encounters, in 2001 – 4, with unabashedly Northern Irish/Irish emigrants in Australia felt like I was involved in a homecoming not available to me during my assimilation in Canada or the USA, 1980s.

Anti-Irish discrimination, in a variety of subtly different forms, has existed in countries of the Diaspora for many years. The subtext of the artwork, in its linen materiality, and the more literal visual emphasis on the linen trade label, suggests an engagement with a renewed pride in Northern Irish/Irish identity. As this lengthy project and dissertation has come to an end, I have felt relieved of the more activated aspects of remembrance that occur with every ritual-installation of this *ILM*. With the doctorate process, I have a renewed gratitude for a deeper knowledge and understanding of my place as an artist within Irish studies and between, rather than, at different times, at opposite ends of, the polemic divisions between sculpture and textiles. Since the sewing of names and collating of hankies is still on-going, I have a continuous link with my still-scattered family, newly extended collegiate research community and a humility, rather than shame, in being from a violent country; a place which, at the same time, can boast various peoples, in all walks of life, working on cultural, socio-political, intellectual or grassroots remedies to constitutive patterns of hatred or antagonism.

My public memorial, *The ILM*, was augmented by further artistic developments in the art of memory and trauma, in '*Mending*'. The latter title suggests a textiles reference, yet the construction is in sculptural materials: a steel tray with oil and a lit figurative projection, together with a new media component – a moving image of myself breathing slowly. These artwork-installations, still in process, serves as a reminder of that the normalisation of violence has become part of the identity of Northern Ireland over a period of thirty years and beyond. In the period of proposed reconciliation after the troubles, my exegesis questions how those killed are commemorated: how each of their individual stories/myths/memories are part of a greater fragile community, which constitute newly imagined ways of living with difference or 'parity of esteem' for one another in the present-day communities of Northern Ireland.



Figure 97: *The ILM* entrance/exit corridor: with braided rope.
Faculty of Creative Arts, University of Wollongong
Thesis exhibition, February, 2005.
model: Robert Trouton; photo Sean Maguire.

Nine counties made up the ancient province of Ulster. Three now lie in the republic; the other six, divided into 26 administrative districts, define the boundaries of Northern Ireland, often referred to as, simply, Ulster.



Figure 98: From 'Ireland on Fast-Forward' by Richard Conniff
National Geographic, September 1994 p. 12.

IRISH GLOSSARY

Dail (1495)

The lower house of the Irish Parliament.

Ecumenical

Ecumenical, meaning of world wide scope or applicability; 'an issue of cosmopolitan import'; general or universal.

Fenian (1496)

The Fenian Brotherhood, founded in 1858, formed part of the history of militant republicanism but the term 'fenian' in the modern context is an abusive description for a Catholic.

Interface

The boundary spaces between Catholic (Nationalist) and Protestant (Unionist) areas; particularly between two highly segregated neighbourhoods, some of which are marked by a Peace Line. (see Heatley 2004)

Loyalist Volunteer Force (1497)

A dissident faction of the UVF formed in the late 1990's, it was mainly made up of former mid-Ulster UVF members opposed to the organisation's ceasefire in the late 1990's. It also attracted supporters in the north and west Belfast and carried out a number of sectarian killings following the death of its leader, Billy Wright.

Northern Ireland Civil Rights Association (1497)

Established in 1967 and modelled on the American black civil rights movement's tactic's of passive resistance and non violence, the NICRA launched a campaign in northern Ireland which led to mass street demonstrations and precipitated loyalist opposition. Many nationalists and republican politicians were active members. The Civil Rights Association became less of a force following Bloody Sunday. The January 1972 killing of 13 people by British soldiers heightened the division between those in the Catholic community who wished to campaign peacefully and those who were prepared to use force.

Official IRA

A republican paramilitary group, it has remained largely dormant since declaring a cease fire in 1972 following a feud with the larger Provisional Wing.

Orange Order (1497)

The largest of the 'Loyal Orders', it was founded in County Armagh on 1795 and, by the time of the Home Rule controversies in the late nineteenth century, had expanded into an important politico-religious grouping which united all forms of unionism in opposition to Irish nationalism and British government efforts at constitutional change.

Throughout its existence its tradition of marching, sometimes through nationalist districts, has caused controversy. Its extensive program of marches culminates on July 12th in a commemoration of the victory of King William III at the Battle of the Boyne in 1690.

Royal Ulster Constabulary (1489)

The police force for Northern Ireland established in 1921.

Sinn/Fein (1499)

Regarded as the political wing of the IRA, it claims descent from the party established in 1904 by Arthur Griffith. It is an all-Ireland political organization unique in that it has representation in the Dail and the House of Commons as well as in the Northern Ireland Assembly, although its MP's do not take their seats in Westminster.

Sectarianism

Sectarianism is a bigoted adherence to a factional viewpoint.

Stormont (1499)

The building, completed in 1929, which housed the Northern Ireland parliament until it was prorogued in 1972. It became the seat of the Assembly established after the 1998 Good Friday Agreement. The term Stormont is also used to refer to the Unionist government of the period 1921-72.

Ulster Defence Association (UDA) (1501)

The largest loyalist paramilitary organization, the UDA was established in Belfast in 1971 and proscribed in 1992.

Brehon Law: 'Under this law a man's identity was defined in terms of tribe and family; outside the tribe he had no legal personality. Only the men of cut and learning passed freely between peoples. Land was the common property of the family and could not be alienated by an individual. Monarchy was elective within an extended family group. Wealth was reckoned in cattle. Slavery was practised. Honour – or 'face' – was assessable in concrete terms of livestock or chattels. Killing might be compounded by a blood-price. Custom and ostracism were the only expressed sanctions, but they were often reinforced predictably by *force majeure*'. (O'Brien 18).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Abramson, Daniel, 'Make History, Not Memory', *Harvard Design Magazine*, Fall, No. 9, 1999.

Akenson, Donald H., 'Hatred-Maintenance Systems', *Intolerance: The E-Coli of the Human Mind*, (ed. Benjamin Perry), The Herbert and Valmae Freilich Foundation, Canberra, 2004.

Akenson, Donald H., *Small Differences: Irish Catholics and Irish Protestants, 1815 – 1922, an International Perspective*, McGill-Queens University Press, Montreal, 1988.

Anderson, Benedict, *Imagined Communities: Reflections on the Origins and Spread of Nationalism*, Verso, London, 1983.

Anthias, Floya and Nira Yuval-Davis, *Racialized Boundaries. Race, Nation, Gender, Colour and Class and the Anti-racist Struggle*, Routledge, London, 1992.

Arthur, Paul, 'The Long Road to Peace in Northern Ireland', *Conflict, Memory and Reconciliation*, (ed. Marianne Elliot), University Press Liverpool, Liverpool, 2002, pp. 143 – 152.

Arthur, Paul and Keith Jeffery, *Northern Ireland Since 1968*, (2nd edition), Oxford, Basil Blackwell, 1996.

Bachman, Ingrid and Ruth Scheuing (eds), *Material Matters: The Art and Culture of Contemporary Textiles*, YYZ Books, Toronto, 1998.

Bardon, Jonathan, *Belfast: An Illustrated History*, The Blackstaff Press Ltd., Belfast, 1982.

Bardon, Jonathan, *A History of Ulster*, The Blackstaff Press Ltd, Belfast, 1992.

Basualdo, Carlos, 'Interview: Carlos Basualdo in conversation with Doris Salcedo', *Doris Salcedo*, Phaidon Press Ltd., London, 2000.

Bennett, Jill, Felicity Fenner and Liam Kelly, *Prepossession*, Ivan Doherty Gallery, Sydney, 2005.

Betterton, Rosemary *Intimate Distance: Women, Artists and the Body*, Routledge, New York, 1996.

Bhabha, Homi, *Nation and Narration*, Routledge, London, 1991.

Bleakley, David, *Saidie Patterson: Irish Peacemaker*, Blackstaff Press, Belfast, 1980.

Bradley, Jessica, 'a la vez Narelle Jubelin at the same time', Art Gallery of Ontario in collaboration with the Art Gallery of York University and with support from the Exhibition Assistance Program of The Canada Council, 1997.

Butler, Judith, *Bodies That Matter: On the Discursive Limits of "Sex"*, Routledge, New York, 1993.

Butler, Judith, *Antigone's Claim: Kinship Between Life and Death*, Columbia University Press, New York, 2000.

Butler, Judith, 'Peace is a Resistance to the Terrible Satisfactions of War', interview with Jill Stauffer, *Believer*, Vol. 1, No.2 (ed.s Heidi Julavits, Ed Park and Vendela Vida) New York, May 2003, pp. – 70.

Cameron, Dan 'Inconsolable': *Doris Salcedo*, New Museum of Contemporary Art, SITE Santa Fe, 1998.

Charley, William, *Flax and Its Products in Ireland*, Bell and Daldy, London, 1862.

Chave, Anna, 'Minimalism and the Rhetoric of Power', *Arts Magazine*, 1990, pp.43-53.

Cheng, Meiling, *In Other Los Angeleses: Multicentric Performance Art*, University of California Press, Ltd., Los Angeles, 2002.

Cochrane, Grace, 'Keeping Content: Craft, History and Curatorship', *Craft and Contemporary Theory*, (ed Sue Rowley), Allen and Unwin, Sydney, 1997.

Clark, Wallace, *Linen on the Green: An Irish Mill Village 1730 – 1982*, The Universities Press Ltd., Belfast, 1982.

Collett, Anne, 'Stories in Bead, Buckskin, Button and Blanket', *Fabrics of Change: Trading Identities, an exhibition with artists Narelle Jubelin, Osmond Kantilla, Kay Lawrence, Nadia Myre, John Pule*, University of Wollongong, Wollongong, 2004, pp. 40 – 55.

Collins, Brenda, *Flax to Fabric: The Story of Irish Linen*, Irish Linen Centre and Lisburn Museum Publication, Lisburn, 1994.

Connolly, Claire (ed.) *Theorizing Ireland: Readers in Cultural Criticism*, Palgrave Macmillan, New York, 2003.

Crawford, W.H., 'The Political Economy of linen: Ulster in the eighteenth century', *Ulster: An Illustrated History* (eds O'Dowd, Mary and Brian Walker Brady, Ciaras,), B.T. Batsford Ltd., London, 1989.

Crimp, Douglas, 'Serra's Public Sculpture: Redefining Site Specificity', *Richard Serra/Sculpture*, (ed. R. Krauss), The Museum of Modern Art, New York, 1986. pp. 41 – 56.

Damousi, Joy, 'The Emotions of History' *The Historian's Conscience: Australian historians on the ethics of history*, (ed. Stuart Macintyre), Melbourne University Press, Melbourne, 2004, pp. 28-39.

Dening, Greg *Readings/Writings*, Melbourne University Press, Carlton South, 1998.

Dempsey, James M., *Fiber Crops*, University of Florida Press, Gainesville, 1975.

Doherty, Clare, 'Kathy Pendergrast' (*The World May Be*) *Fantastic, Biennale of Sydney*, 2002, pp. 174 – 176.

Douglas, Crimp, 'Serra's Public Sculpture: Redefining Site Specificity', *Richard Serra: Sculpture*, (ed Krauss, Rosalind E.) The Museum of Modern Art, New York, 1986.

Eagleton, Terry, 'Changing the Question', *Theorizing Ireland: Readers in Cultural Criticism*, (ed Claire Connolly), Palgrave Macmillan, New York, 2003.

Elliott, Philip 'Reporting Northern Ireland: a study of news in Great Britain, Northern Ireland and the Republic of Ireland', *Ethnicity and the media: An analysis of media reporting in the United Kingdom, Canada and Ireland*, (ed. James D. Halloran), United Nations Unesco, Paris, 1977.

Engberg, Juliana, 'Rubbing Shoulders: Free Association is the Delight of Good Friends', *Narelle Jubelin: Soft Shoulder*, The Renaissance Society, University of Chicago, 1994, pp. 11 – 24.

Fairbrother, Trevor and Kathryn Potts, *In and Out of Place: Contemporary Art and the American Social Landscape*, The Museum of Fine Arts, Boston, 1993.

Farrell, Kirby, *Post-Traumatic Culture: Injury and Interpretation in the Nineties*, John Hopkins University Press, Baltimore, 1998.

Feitlowitz, Marguerite, 'Doris Salcedo', "Introduction to Colombia: The Traffic of Terror." *The Magazine: Colombia: The Traffic of Terror, Crimes of War Project magazine*, cultural supplement. Ed. Anthony Dworkin. p. 1 of 3. March 7, 2002, accessed March 27 2003 <http://www.moderntimes.com/palace/method.htm>

Feldman, Allen, *Formations of Violence: The Narrative of the Body and Political Terror in Northern Ireland*, The University of Chicago Press, Chicago, 1991.

Ferris, Alison, 'Forbidden Touch: Anne Wilson's Cloth', *Reinventing Textiles Vol. 2: Gender and Identity* (ed. Janis Jefferies), Telos Art Publishing, Bristol, 2001, pp. 39 – 47.

Finkelpearl, Tom (ed) *Dialogues in Public Art*, MIT Press, Cambridge, 2000.

Finlayson, Alan, 'Nationalism as Ideological Interpellation: the Case of Ulster Loyalism', *Ethnic and Racial Studies* 19: 1, 1996. pp. 88- 112.

- Foley, Helene P., *Homeric "Hymn to Demeter": Translation, Commentary, and Interpretive Essays*, Princeton University Press, Princeton, 1994.
- Foley, Michael, 'Impunity, Reparation and Reconciliation in Latin America', unpublished paper, University of Ulster, 1999.
- Fowler, Robert, *Cambridge Companion to Homer*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2004.
- Geoghegan, V., 'Socialism, National Identities and Post-Nationalist Citizenship', *Irish Political Studies* 9, 1994. pp. 61 -80.
- Gill, Conrad, *The Rise of the Irish Linen Industry*, Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1925.
- Glazier, Richard, *Linen Damasks Historic Textile Fabrics*, B.T. Batsford Ltd., London, 1923.
- Graham, Colin 'The Spirit of the Nation', *Theorizing Ireland: Readers in Cultural Criticism*, (ed Claire Connolly), Palgrave Macmillan, New York, 2003.
- Grosz, Elizabeth, *Sexual Subversions: Three French Feminisms*, Allen and Unwin, Sydney, 1989.
- Hafner, Diana 'Memorials and Social Meaning', *Memorial Art and Architecture* seminar, Queensland College of Art, Conference 16 August, 2003.
- Haraway, Donna, *Modest_Witness @Second_Millennium.Femaleman© _Meets_ Oncomouse™: Feminism and Technoscience*, Routledge, London, 1997.
- Harper, Catherine, 'Narelle Jubelin at Goldsmiths College, London,' *Textile:The Journal of Cloth and Culture* (eds Pennina Barnett and Janis Jefferies), Vol. 1, Issue 3, 2003, London, pp. 210 - 229.
- Heaney, Seamus, *Finders Keepers: Selected Prose 1971 – 2001*, Farrar, Straus and Giroux, New York, 2002.

Heatley, Colin, *Interface: Flashpoints in Northern Ireland*, Lagan Books, Belfast, 2004.

Hegarty, Roddy, 'Ulster Covenant', entry in *The Encyclopaedia of Ireland* (general ed. Brian Lalor), Gill and Macmillan, Dublin, 2003, pp. 1089 -90.

Hemmings, Jessica 'Defining a Movement', *Fiberarts*, September/October 2005, pp. 30 – 33.

Higgins, Judith, 'Report from Ireland: Art from the Edge (Part 1)' *Art in America*, No. 12, 1995, pp. 37 – 43.

Horner, John, *The Linen Trade of Europe During the Spinning-Wheel Period*, M'Caw, Stevenson and Orr, Belfast, 1920.

Huyssen, Andreas, *Twilight Memories: Marking Time in a Culture of Amnesia*, Routledge, New York, 1995.

Huyssen, Andreas, *After the Great Divide: modernism, mass culture, postmodernism*, Basingstoke, Macmillan, 1988.

Huyssen, Andreas, *Present Pasts: Urban Palimpsests and the Politics of Memory*, Stanford University Press, Palo Alto, 2003.

Isaacs, Jennifer *The Gentle Arts: 200 Years of Australian Women's Domestic and Decorative Arts*, Lansdowne Press, Sydney, 1987.

Jefferies, Janis, 'Text and Textiles: Weaving across the Borderlines', *New Feminist Art Criticism: Critical Strategies* (ed Deepwell, Katy), Manchester University Press, New York, 1995, pp. 164-173.

Jefferies, Janis (ed), 'Introduction: Textile Transitions', *Reinventing Textiles Vol 2: Gender and Identity*, Telos Art Publishing, Bristol, 1998, pp. 1 – 6.

Janis Jefferies, 'Midnight's Children: Salman Rushdie and the translations of Hybridity in the Artworks of Zarina Bhimji, Hew Locke and Yinka Shonibare,' *Reinventing Textiles Vol. 3: Postcolonialism and Creativity* (eds Sharrad, Paul, and Anne Collett), Telos Art Publishing, Bristol, 2004, pp. 1 – 14.

Johnson, Vivien, 'People Deliver Art', *Narelle Jubelin: Trade Delivers People*, Aperto: La Biennale Di Venezia, 1990.

Jones, Dorothy, 'Threading Words Together' *New Literatures Review (un)fabric/ating empire* 36 Winter, (ed. Paul Sharrad), University of Wollongong, 2000. pp. 3 – 16.

Kennedy, Brian, 'Update, Review: Count the Cost', *Circa* #73 Autumn (Ed. Tanya Kiang) 1995, p. 63

Krauss Rosalind E., *The Originality of the Avant-Garde and Other Modernist Myths*, The MIT Press, Cambridge, 1986.

Krauss Rosalind E., 'Portrait of the Artist...Throwing Lead', *Richard Serra/Sculpture*, The Museum of Modern Art, New York, 1986.

Krauss Rosalind E., *Passages in Modern Sculpture*, The MIT Press, Cambridge, 1977.

Kwon, Miwon, 'For Hamburg: Public Art and Urban Identities', *Public Art is Everywhere*, (curator: Christian Philipp Muller), Kunstverein Hamburg and Kulturbehörde Hamburg, Hamburg, 1997, pp. 95-109.

Kurin, Richard, *Reflections of a Cultural Broker: A View from the Smithsonian*, Smithsonian Books, Washington DC, 1997.

Lacy, Suzanne (ed), *Mapping the Terrain: New Genre Public Art*, Bay Press, Seattle, 1995.

Lauren, Rosenstock, 'Introduction', *Richard Serra/Sculpture*, The Museum of Modern Art, New York, 1986.

Laurence, Janet, 'Memorials', *Memorial Art and Architecture* seminar speaker, Queensland College of Art, Conference, 16 August, 2003.

Lin, Maya, *Maya Lin Boundaries*, Simon and Schuster, New York, 2000.

Lijphart, A. *Democracy in Plural Societies: A Comparative Exploration*, Yale University Press, New Haven, 1977.

Lippard, Lucy, *The Lure of the Local: Senses of Place in a Multicentered Society*, The New Press, New York, 1997.

Llewellyn, Nigel, 'Elizabeth Parker's 'Sampler': Memory, Suicide and the Presence of the Artist', *Material Matters* (eds Marius Kwint, Christopher Breward and Jeremy Aynsmy), Oxford, Berg, 1999.

Lloyd, David 'Ruination: Allan de Souza's Irish Photography', *Third Text*, Vol. 18, Issue 3, Kala Press/Black Umbrella, 2004.

Marcia Muelder Eaton, 'The Role of Art in Sustaining Communities', *Diversity and Community: An Interdisciplinary Reader*, (ed Alperson, Philip), Blackwell Publishing, Melbourne, 2002.

McKittrick, David, Seamus Kelters, Brian Feeney and Chris Thornton, *Lost Lives: The Stories of the Men, Women and Children who died as a result of the Northern Ireland Troubles*, Mainstream Publishing Company Ltd., Edinburgh, 2000.

Melaugh, Martin and Brendan Lynn, 'A Glossary of Terms Related to the Conflict', *Conflict Archive on the Internet (CAIN) Web Service: Conflict and Politics in Northern Ireland (1968 to the Present)*, November 11, 2004 <<http://cain.ulst.ac.uk/index.html>>.

Médecins Sans Frontières (MSF) <http://www.msf.org/content/page.cfm?articleid=6589C12E-DC2C-11D4-B2010060084A6370> 'Colombia: Surviving in a culture of violence' dated 01.11.2000, accessed March 25 2005.

Merewether, Charles, 'Naming Violence in the Work of Doris Salcedo', *Third Text* #24, Autumn 1993, p 44 – 60.

Merewether, Charles, 'To Bear Witness' *Doris Salcedo*, New Museum of Contemporary Art, New York, 1998.

Merritt, Justine, 'Introduction' *In The Ribbon: A Celebration of Life*, (eds Marianne Philbin and Lark Books Staff), Lark Books, Ashville, 1985a, pp. 11 – 13.

Mohanty, Chandra Talpade, 'Cartographies of Struggle. Third World Women and the Politics of Feminism', *Third World Women and the Politics of Feminism*, (eds. C.T. Mohanty, A. Russon and L. Torres), Indiana University Press, Bloomington, 1991. pp. 1- 47.

Moore, Aidan. Personal Interview. September 2004.

Morris, Robert, *Continuous Projects Altered Daily: The Writings of Robert Morris*, MIT Press, London, 1993.

Morris, Robert 'Some Notes on the Phenomenology of Making', *Artforum*, VIII, April 1975.

Mosse, G. L., *Nationalism and Sexuality: Respectability and Abnormal Sexuality in Modern Europe*, Howard Fertig, New York, 1985.

Morrison, Danny 'Dear Future' *Kunapipi: Journal of Postcolonial Writing*, (ed Anne Collett), Vol XX, No. 2, 1998.

Mouffe, C. 'Democratic Politics Today', *Dimensions of Radical Democracy: Pluralism, Citizenship, Community*, (ed. C. Mouffe), Verso, London, 1992. pp.1- 14.

Murtagh, Brendan, 'Image making versus reality: ethnic division and the planning challenge of Belfast's peace lines', *Reimagining the Pariah City: Urban Development in Belfast and Detroit*, (eds William J.V. Neill, Diana S. Fitzsimons and Brenda Murtagh), Ashgate Publishing Ltd., Sydney, 1995.

Nash, Catherine, 'Remapping the Body/Land: New Cartographies of Identity, Gender, Landscape in Ireland', *Writing Women and Space: Colonial and Postcolonial Geographies*, (eds Alison Blunt and Gillian Rose), The Guilford Press, New York, 1994, pp. 227 – 250.

Neill, William J.V., 'Lipstick on the Gorilla? Conflict Management, Urban Development and Image making in Belfast', *Reimagining the Pariah City: Urban Development in Belfast and Detroit*, (eds William J.V. Neill, Diana S. Fitzsimons and Brenda Murtagh), Ashgate Publishing Ltd., Sydney, 1995, pp. 150 – 176.

Neill, William J.V., 'Promoting the city: image, reality and racism in Detroit', *Reimagining the Pariah City: Urban Development in Belfast and Detroit*, (eds William J.V. Neill, Diana S. Fitzsimons and Brenda Murtagh), Ashgate Publishing Ltd., Sydney, 1995, pp. 113 – 156.

O'Brien, Conor Cruise and Máire O'Brien, *A Concise History of Ireland*, Thames and Hudson, London, 1972.

O'Leary, Brendan 'The Protection of Human Rights under the Belfast Agreement', *The Political Quarterly Publishing Co. Ltd.*, Blackwell Publishers, Oxford, 2001, pp. 353-365.

O'Leary, Brendan and John McGarry, *The Politics of Antagonism: Understanding Northern Ireland*, The Athlone Press Ltd., London, 1993.

Orenstein, Gloria Feman and Irene Diamond (ed.s) *Reweaving the World: The Emergence of Ecofeminism*, Sierra Club Books, San Francisco, 1990.

Parker, R. *The Subversive Stitch: Embroidery and the Making of the Feminine*, Routledge, New York, 1984.

Pershing, Linda, 'Peace Work out of Piecework: Feminist Needlework Metaphors and The Ribbon around the Pentagon,' *Feminist Theory and The Study of Folklore*, (eds Susan Tower Hillis, Linda Pershing and M. Jane Yeung) University of Illinois Press, Chicago, 1993, pp. 327 – 357.

Pershing, Linda, *The Ribbon around the Pentagon: Peace by Piecemakers*, The University of Tennessee Press, Knoxville, 1996.

Pettman, J.J., *Worlding Women: A Feminist International Politics*, Routledge, London, 1996.

Phelan, Peggy, 'Performance, live culture and things of the heart: Peggy Phelan (in conversation with Marquard Smith)', *Journal of Visual Culture*, Vol.2 (3), Sage Publications, London, 2003.

Pollack, Andy (ed.), *A Citizens' Inquiry: The Opsahl Report on Northern Ireland*, Lilliput Press, Dublin, 1993.

Porter, Elisabeth, 'Identity, location, plurality: women, nationalism and Northern Ireland', *Women, Ethnicity and Nationalism: The Politics of Transition*, (ed.s Rick Wilford and Robert L. Miller), Routledge, London, 1998, pp. 36 – 58.

Princenthal, Nancy, (*Silence Seen*) *Doris Salcedo*, Phaidon Press Ltd., London, 2000.

Prior, Lindsay, *The Social Organisation of Death: Medical Discourse and Social Practices in Belfast*, The MacMillan Press Ltd., London, 1989.

Radcliffe, Sarah and Sallie Westwood, *ReMaking the Nation: Place, Identity and Politics in Latin America*, Routledge, London, 1996.

Reardon, Betty, 'Women's Visions of Peace,' *The Gendered New World Order*, (eds Jennifer Turpin and Lorentzen, Lois Ann) Routledge, London, 1996, pp. 224 – 236.

Reynolds, Helen, ' 'Your Clothes are Materials of War': The British Government Promotion of Home Sewing during the second World War', *The Culture of Sewing: Gender Consumption and Home Dressmaking* (ed. Barbara Burman), Berg, New York, 1999.

Rowley, Sue (ed) *Craft and Contemporary Theory*, Allen and Unwin, St. Leonards, 1997.

Ruane, J. and J. Todd, 'Why can't you get along with each other?: Culture, structure and the Northern Ireland conflict', (ed. Hughes, Eamonn) *Culture and Politics in Northern Ireland 1960 - 1990*, Open University Press, Milton Keynes, 1991.

Ryan, David, 'Kathy Prendergast's City Drawings Series', Artkrush: 'The Art Online Magazine', www.artkrush.com/thearticles/010_woa_ryanopendergast/index.asp 2003, April 12 2003, pp. 1 – 12.

Saunders, Doug, 'In Memory We Trust: The Secrets of the Sept. 11 Anniversary Industry', *Globe Focus, The Globe and Mail*, July 13, 2002, Section F, pp. F1 and F7.

Schneider, Jane, 'Rumpelstiltskin's Bargain: Folklore and the Merchant Capitalist Intensification of Linen Manufacture in Early Modern Europe', *Cloth and Human Experience* (eds Weiner, Annette B. and Jane Schneider) Smithsonian Institution Press London, 1989. pp. 177 – 213.

Scott, Joan Wallach, 'Feminist Reverberations.' *differences: a Journal of Feminist Cultural Studies*, 13, no. 3, 2002, pp. 1-23.

Scruggs, Jan C and Joel L. Swerdlow, *The Vietnam Veterans Memorial: To Heal a Nation*, Harper and Row, Publishers, New York, 1985.

Seltzer, Mark, 'Wound Culture: Trauma in the Pathological Public Sphere,' *October* 80 (Spring) 1997, pp. 4 -6.

Serra, Richard, *Writings/Interviews*, The University of Chicago Press, Ltd., London, 1994.

Sharrad, Paul, 'Introduction', *New Literatures Review: (un)fabricating empire*, No. 36 (ed Paul Sharrad), University of Wollongong, Wollongong, 2000.

Sharrad, Paul, 'Trade and Textiles in the Pacific and India', *Fabrics of Change: Trading Identities: an exhibition with artists Narelle Jubelin, Osmond Kantilla, Kay Lawrence, Nadia Myre, John Pule*, University of Wollongong, Wollongong, 2004, pp. 12 – 25.

Sharrad, Paul, and Anne Collett (eds), *Reinventing Textiles: Postcolonialism and Creativity* Vol. 3, Telos Art Publishing, Bristol, 2004.

Smith, Sidonie and Kay Schaffer, *Human Rights and Narrated Lives*, Palgrave MacMillan, New York, 2004.

Smith, Sidonie, *Subjectivity, Identity, and the Body: Women's Autobiographical Practices in the Twentieth Century*, Indiana University Press, Bloomington, 1993.

Slicher van Bath, B.H., *The Agrarian History of Western Europe A.D. 500 – 1850*, Edward Arnold, London, 1963.

Stephen, Ann, *Narelle Jubelin: Dead Slow*, Centre for Contemporary Arts (CCA) in association with the Biennale of Sydney, Glasgow and Sydney, 1992.

Stephen, Ann, 'The Conundrum of A Mirror Piece: On Being able to Look at Ourselves Seeing', *Fieldwork: Australian Art 1968 – 2002* (curators Jason Smith and Charles Green), National Gallery of Victoria, Melbourne, 2002, pp. 026 – 029.

Sturken, Marita, 'The Wall, the Screen and the Image: the Vietnam Veteran's Memorial', *Visual Culture Reader*, (ed. Nicholas Mirzoeff), Routledge, London, 1998. pp.163 – 178.

Tamir, Y. *Liberal Nationalism*, Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1995.

Taylor, Thomas (translation), *Porphyry: On the Cave of the Nymphs*, Phanes Press Grand Rapids, 1991.

Thomas, Sue (ed) *New Literatures Review: Decolonising Bodies*, No. 30, Winter, Charles Sturt University Production Unit, Wagga Wagga, 1995.

Todd, Ian, 'Excavations at Sanida' *Report to the Department of Antiquities in Cyprus*, 1992. pp. 75-193.

Trouton, Lycia, 'Intercultural Arts Theatre: Interview with dancer-choreographer, Elizabeth Cameron Dalman', *Kunapipi: Journal of Postcolonial Writing*, Vol. XXVI, Number 2, (ed. Anne Collett), University of Wollongong, Wollongong, 2004, pp. 168 – 186.

Trouton, Lycia, 'Peace and Interconnection through Public Textile Projects' *The Space Between* conference proceedings, Curtin University, Perth, 2004.

Walter, Bronwen, *Outsiders Inside: Whiteness, place and Irish Women*, Routledge, New York, 2001.

Warden, Alex, *The Linen Trade, Ancient and Modern*, Longman, Roberts and Green, London, 1864.

Warner, W.L., *The Living and The Dead*, Yale University Press, New Haven, 1959.

Watt, Lauchlan MacLean, *Attic and Elizabethan Tragedy*, J.M. Dent and Sons, London, 1908.

Webb, Vivienne, 'From Lichtenstein to Viola: Material World 25 years of The Fabric Workshop and Museum', 2002.

Weidmer, Caroline, *The Claims of Memory: Representations of the Holocaust in Contemporary Germany and France*, Cornell University Press, London, 1999.

Weiner, Annette B. and Jane Schneider, (eds) *Cloth and Human Experience*, Smithsonian Institute Press, London, 1989.

Weschler, Lawrence, *Seeing Is Forgetting the Name of the Thing One Sees: A Life of Contemporary Artist Robert Irwin*, University of California, Berkeley, 1982.

Wichert, Sabine, *Northern Ireland since 1945*, Longman Group UK Ltd., London, 1991.

Wilcox, Don, 'The People' *In the Ribbon: A Celebration of Life*, (eds Marianne Philbin and Lark Books Staff), Lark Books, Ashville, 1985, pp. 17-26.

Wiles, David, *Greek Theatre Performance: An Introduction*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2000.

Wilford, R. 'Women and Politics in Northern Ireland', *Parliamentary Affairs* 49:1, 1996. pp. 41-54.

Wilford, Rick and Robert L. Miller (eds), *Women, Ethnicity and Nationalism: The Politics of Transition*, Routledge, London, 1998.

Wodiczko, Krzysztof, *Critical Vehicles: Writings, Projects, Interviews*, The MIT Press, Cambridge, 1999.

Wood Conroy, Diana [et al.], *Fabrics of Change: Trading Identities: an exhibition with artists Narelle Jubelin, Osmond Kantilla, Kay Lawrence, Nadia Myre, John Pule*, University of Wollongong, Wollongong, 2004.

Wood Conroy, Diana, 'Kay Lawrence', *Texts from the Edge: Tapestry and Identity in Australia*, Jam Factory Craft and Design Centre, Adelaide, 1994.

Wood Conroy, Diana, *An Archaeology of Tapestry: Context, Signs, Histories of Contemporary Practice*, Unpublished DCA dissertation, University of Wollongong, Wollongong, Australia, 1995.

Wood Conroy, Diana, *Texts from the Edge: Tapestry and Identity in Australia*, Jam Factory Craft and Design Centre, Adelaide, 1994.

Wood Conroy, Diana, *The Fabric of the Ancient Theatre: Excavation Journals from Cyprus and the Eastern Mediterranean*, Moufflon Publications Ltd., Cyprus, 2004.

Wood Conroy, 'Oblivion and Metamorphosis: Australian Weavers in Relation to Ancient Artefacts from Cyprus', *Reinventing Textiles Vol 1: Tradition and Innovation*, (ed Sue Rowley) Telos Art Publishing, Bristol, 1999.

Wood Conroy, Diana, 'Intimacy and Politics', *Object*, Autumn, Crafts Council of New South Wales, 1993, pp. 24 - 27.

Woods, M., *We Wore What We Got. Women's Clothes in the Second World War*, Warwickshire Books, Devon, 1989.

[www.bbc.co.uk](http://www.bbc.co.uk/northernireland/history/legacy/index.shtml) 'History: The Legacy Project.' 1999. accessed May 2004.
<<http://www.bbc.co.uk/northernireland/history/legacy/index.shtml>>

Young, James, E., 'Memory and Counter-Memory: The End of the Monument in Germany' *Harvard Design Magazine*, 'Constructions of Memory', Fall, No. 9, 1999, pp. 1 – 7.

Young, James, *At Memory's Edge: After-images of the Holocaust in Contemporary Art and Architecture*, Yale University Press, New Haven, 2000.

Young, R.M., 'Graveyards and Social Structure', *Rural Sociology*, 25, 1960. pp. 446 – 50.

Yuval-Davis, N. and F. Anthias (ed.s) *Woman-Nation-State*, Macmillan, London, 1989.

Yuval-Davis, N., 'Women, ethnicity and Empowerment', *Shifting Identities. Shifting Racisms. A Feminist and Psychological Reader*, (eds. K.-K. Bhavnani and A. Phoenix), London, Sage, 1994. pp. 179-197.

Zonabend, F. 'Les Morts et Les Vivants. Le Cimetière de Minot de Chatillonnais', *Études Rurales*, 52, 1973. pp. 7 – 23.

List of Figures

| | |
|--|-------|
| Figure 1: Australian Indigenous artist Yvonne Koolmatrie (left) with Diana Wood Conroy, 2002 Adelaide Festival of the Arts, South Australia. | iv |
| Figure 2: First exhibition of <i>The Irish Memorial: Between Worlds – The Common Body</i> , September 7, 2001, USA. | vi |
| Figure 3: Map of Ireland and Northern Ireland | ix |
| Figure 4: Solo thesis exhibition, accompanying installation: <i>The Mending Room</i> , Materials: galvanised steel tray, vegetable oil, projected moving image on large format LCD monitor (above): a work entitled, <i>Breathing</i> . University of Wollongong, February 2005. Photo: Sean Maguire. | xii |
| Figure 5: Visit to studio-home of Musqueam/Coast Salish weaver, Vivian Campbell (center), with Jill Baird (left) from the Museum of Anthropology, and Lycia Trouton (right), Vancouver, B.C., Canada. 2003 (photo: L. Trouton)..... | xviii |
| Figure 6: My father, Robert Trouton, with a sculptural detail from The Greek Theatre site of my ‘labyrinth’ installation, Cranbrook Educational Grounds, Bloomfield Hills, Michigan, U.S.A, 1991. | xviii |
| Figure 7: Installing one of two compressed peat moss (Irish Bog Oak) columns: Lycia (left) with Hendrick Miller (right), at the entrance of the Seattle Centre House, U.S.A., 2000..... | xviii |
| Figure 8: Lycia, with mother, Maureen Trouton (centre), and Edith Morriott (right) needleworker, after the opening of the exhibition in Canberra, ACT, 2004. (photo: Thomas Fitzgerald) | xviii |
| Figure 9: Working with pins and rubbings during residency at The Gunnery studios, Artspace, Sydney, 2004. | xix |
| Figure 10: <i>Fabric(ation)s of the Postcolonial</i> conference Dec. 2002. Dr. Dorothy Jones (L), artists Kay Lawrence, (centre), Janis Jefferies (R)..... | xix |
| Figure 11: Solo thesis exhibition of <i>The Irish Memorial</i> 2005. Faculty gallery, Faculty of Creative Arts, University of Wollongong, February, 2005..... | 2 |
| Figure 12: Excavation of Being at Rest: Make Do and | 7 |

| | |
|--|----|
| Figure 13: Irish linen handkerchiefs: ‘Ormo’ Handkerchiefs – acknowledged to be amongst the best ... advertisement by McBride & Williams Ltd. Ormeau Avenue Belfast. <i>Belfast an Industrial City</i> Jonathan Bardon, Blackstaff Press Ltd., 1983. p. 223. | 8 |
| Figure 14: Detail of chain stitch embroidery with sewn ‘hairy spots’ and label, Irish Linen handkerchiefs of <i>The ILM</i> | 9 |
| Figure 15: Maki-san and Akemi Endo of Tokyo, Japan with their 300 origami paper cranes, called <i>senbazuru</i> , for peace, 2002. | 10 |
| Figure 16: Embroidered handkerchiefs of <i>The ILM</i> model: Bodie O’Dell; photo: Sean Maguire | 12 |
| Figure 17: Installation ‘Horrific Hankies’: <i>The Irish Linen Memorial</i> University of Wollongong, Cloisters Gallery, Faculty of Creative Arts. Nov. 1 – 11, 2002. Photo: Sean Maguire..... | 13 |
| Figure 18: composer, Thomas Fitzgerald, with screenwriter, Rie Natalenko, Wollongong, 2003. | 14 |
| Figure 19: 3 oil pan and hair | 15 |
| Figure 20: Solo thesis exhibition: <i>The Irish Linen Memorial</i> Faculty of Creative Arts Gallery, University of Wollongong. February 2005. model: Bodie O’Dell; photo: Sean Maguire. | 16 |
| Figure 21: Kells Art Embroideries 1886 ‘Working Bodies, Celtic Textiles and the Donegal Industrial Fund 1883-1890.’ Janice Helland, <i>Textile: Journal of Cloth and Culture</i> , July 2004, Vol.2, Is.2, Berg, London. p. 143. | 17 |
| Figure 22: ‘Transformation of Tears’: <i>The Irish Linen Memorial</i> Performance by <i>Mirramu Dance Company</i> (see moving image on DVD) CraftACT Gallery 1, Canberra, Australian Capital Territory. February 2004. Photo: Creative Imaging photography. | 19 |
| Figure 23: Irish necklace of leprechaun on toadstool and horseshoe with Connemarra marble; on linen handkerchief. Gifts sent to me as a child in Canada from my maternal grandmother. | 22 |
| Figure 24: Victims of the Omagh Bombing printed in the newspaper <i>Tyrone Constitution</i> , Northern Ireland, on August 20, 1998. | 23 |
| Figure 25: Poster designed by Donia Nachsen for the ‘Make-do and Mend’ campaign; no date; From The Imperial War Museum, ‘Your Clothes Are Materials of War’. Helen Reynolds, <i>The Culture of Sewing: Gender, Consumption and Home Dressmaking</i> , (ed. Barbara Burman). p. 335. | 27 |

| | |
|--|----|
| Figure 26: Kay Lawrence and various Indigenous artists. 'Murray River' exhibition, Adelaide, 2002. Note: the pair of flour sack underwear, with the label showing. Similar undergarments would have been made out of linen sacks in Ireland..... | 28 |
| Figure 27: Violinist/composer Thomas Fitzgerald (centre), 2003, Lycia (left), theorist Marta Cabrera (back), Luz Hincapié (Colombia), Wollongong..... | 29 |
| Figure 28: embroidered handkerchiefs by Margot Damon windows looking out onto civic plaza, 'Transformation of Tears': The Irish Linen Memorial at CraftACT Gallery, Canberra, Australian Capital Territory. February Photo: Creative Imaging photography, 2004. | 30 |
| Figure 29: from <i>The Politics of Antagonism: Understanding Northern Ireland</i> . Brendan O'Leary and John McGarry, The Athlone Press, London. 1993, p. 15..... | 32 |
| Figure 30: from <i>The Politics of Antagonism: Understanding Northern Ireland</i> . Brendan O'Leary and John McGarry, The Athlone Press, London. 1993, p. 9..... | 33 |
| Figure 31: From 'Lipstick on the Gorilla?: Conflict Management, urban development and image making in Belfast,' William J.V. Neill in <i>Reimagining the Pariah City: Urban Development in Belfast and Detroit</i> (Ed.s William Neill, Diana Fitzsimons and Brendan Murphy), p. 59..... | 35 |
| Figure 32: From <i>Reimagining the Pariah City: Urban Development in Belfast and Detroit</i> Ed.s William Neill, Diana Fitzsimons and Brendan Murphy, p. 214. | 36 |
| Figure 33: Kathy Prendergast, <i>Secret Kiss</i> , knitted wool, n/d, p. 173. (The World May Be Fantastic): Sydney Biennale, curator Richard Grayson, 2002. | 39 |
| Figure 34: Kathy Prendergast, <i>Land</i> , fabric, 1991. The Arts council Collection, The South Bank Centre, London 'Rethinking Mapping' <i>Writing Women and Space Colonial and Postcolonial Geographies</i> . (Ed.s Alison Blunt and Gillian Rose) Gilford Press, New York, 1994. p. 242..... | 43 |
| Figure 35: Kathy Prendergast, <i>Moving Mountain</i> , bronze, 'Remapping the Body/Land' <i>Writing Women and Space Colonial and Postcolonial Geographies</i> . (Ed.s Alison Blunt and Gillian Rose) Gilford Press, New York, 1994. p. 243. | 44 |

| | |
|--|----|
| Figure 36: ‘Transformation of Tears’: <i>The Irish Linen Memorial</i> CraftACT Gallery 1, Canberra, February 2004, Photo: Creative Imaging photography. | 50 |
| Figure 37: Egyptian mummy: European Community Publication booklet <i>European Linen, Masters of Linen</i> ; Paris France..... | 50 |
| Figure 38: Flax flower emblem for the Northern Ireland Assembly. On 2nd December, 1999, power was devolved to the Northern Ireland Assembly and its Executive Committee of Ministers. The Northern Ireland Assembly passed a motion on 24th October, 2000, to apply for admission to the Commonwealth Parliamentary Association (CPA). Elections to the Northern Ireland Assembly were held on 26 November 2003. The Assembly is currently suspended (Jan 2005)..... | 51 |
| Figure 39: William Ewart & Son, Ltd. Advertisement for all the principal markets of the world ... 2 million yards of linen a month 1814 -1937, <i>Belfast: An Industrial City</i> , Jonathan Bardon, Blackstaff Press Ltd., 1983. p. 222..... | 51 |
| Figure 40: Diana Wood Conroy, Woven Tapestry, wool and silk weft on linen warp, 22.5 x 29.5cm ,2002 | 52 |
| Figure 41: Detail, cross section of the flax stem, <i>Linen on the Green</i> ,Wallace Clark, University Press Belfast Ltd., 1983. p.93..... | 53 |
| Figure 42: Workers at their births in a scutch mill where the atmosphere was thick with dust. <i>Flax to fabric, the Story of Irish Linen</i> , Brenda Collins, An Irish Linen Centre & Lisburn Museum Publication, 1994.p.15..... | 56 |
| Figure 43: Removing Flax from Lint Hole, County Antrim, <i>Cloth and Human Experience</i> , Ed.s Weiner & Schneider, Smithsonian Institution Press, London, 1989. p. 194..... | 57 |
| Figure 44: A weaver at a damask power loom. <i>Flax to fabric, the Story of Irish Linen</i> , Brenda Collins, An Irish Linen Centre & Lisburn Museum Publication 1994. p. 29. | 57 |
| Figure 45: “Eighteenth century Beetling Engine” brochure, Irish Linen Centre & Lisburn Museum, Northern Ireland tourist Board, 1996. | 58 |
| Figure 46: Linen Triangle, Map of Ulster. <i>Flax to fabric, the Story of Irish Linen</i> , Brenda Collins, An Irish Linen Centre & Lisburn Museum Publication,1994.p.17. | 60 |
| Figure 47: Gilford Mill, Co. Down, N. Ireland. from a 1999 brochure for its re-development as a shopping mall and arts centre, Gilford Creative Arts, Peter R Matson, Director. | 62 |

| | |
|---|----|
| Figure 48: employees of a Belfast Linen mill, <i>Belfast an Industrial City</i> Jonathan Bardon, Blackstaff Press Ltd. 1983. p.217..... | 62 |
| Figure 49: DNA reflections (detail) 2000. Jacquard weave, cotton, rayon and linen threads 1080x1060mm. Artist, Kelly Thompson, Locus Operandi exhibit at Dunedin Art Gallery, 2001. | 63 |
| Figure 50: Fragment of linen cloth, 7.5 cm in length. House of Dionysis, second century AD. <i>The Fabric of the Ancient Theatre</i> Diana Wood Conroy, Moufflon Publications Ltd., Cyprus, 2004..... | 66 |
| Figure 51: My mother, Maureen Trouton, ironing the linen handkerchiefs Canada, 2002..... | 68 |
| Figure 52: My mother, Maureen Trouton, in her kitchen Vancouver, B. C., Canada, helping me prepare the linen handkerchiefs to travel to Australia. 2002..... | 70 |
| Figure 53: Historic strike leaflet of the Amalgamated Transport and General Workers' Union. | 70 |
| Figure 54: Sadie Patterson with a sample of her linen and lace work..... | 71 |
| Figure 55: Sadie Patterson planting a memorial peace cross for her nephew, 1979. | 72 |
| Figure 56: 2002-4 Logo made by Lycia for the <i>Fabric(ation)s of the Postcolonial</i> project, University of Wollongong: an investigation of the links between textiles, literary theory(text) and colonialism. | 72 |
| Figure 57: brochure, Irish Linen Centre & Lisburn Museum, Northern Ireland tourist Board, 1996. | 73 |
| Figure 58: 'Bleaching Greens' at Glenmore, Lisburn, Northern Ireland. <i>Cloth and Human Experience</i> Ed.s Weiner & Schneider, Smithsonian Institution Press, London, 1989. p. 203. | 73 |
| Figure 59: The public performance, 1982-1985. Linda Pershing, <i>The Ribbon around the Pentagon: Peace by Piecemakers</i> , University of Tennessee Press, Knoxville, 1996. | 79 |
| Figure 60: on-site protest Linda Pershing, <i>The Ribbon around the Pentagon: Peace by Piecemakers</i> , The University of Tennessee Press, Knoxville, 1996..... | 82 |
| Figure 61: <i>The Crystal Quilt</i> installation – performance..... | 84 |
| Figure 62: example of drawnwork | 86 |
| Figure 63: <i>Women-in-Black</i> documentation in a group exhibition, October, 2002.Seattle Community College, Seattle, Washington, U.S.A. Curator: Susan Platt, PhD. Photo: Lycia Trouton..... | 87 |

| | |
|---|-----|
| Figure 64: Pétit point <i>Rendition of Hand Hemmed Tiwi cloth</i> , Irish linen, circa. 1974 (made at 'Tiwi Designs' (see image below). Museum of Contemporary Art, Sydney <i>Fabrics of Change: Trading Identities</i> by Wood Conroy et al., p.25..... | 92 |
| Figure 65: Bathurst Island, 'Tiwi Designs' artists and seamstresses, Photo: D Conroy 1974 | 93 |
| Figure 66: <i>The Field</i> , National Gallery of Victoria, 1968 Ann Stephen, 'The Conundrum of A Mirror Piece: On Being able to Look at Ourselves Seeing', <i>Fieldwork: Australian Art 1968 – 2002</i> (curators Jason Smith and Charles Green), National Gallery of Victoria, Melbourne, 2002..... | 94 |
| Figure 67: framed <i>Pétit Point on linen</i> (above) <i>Rendition of Woven Cloth: Paisley Shawl</i> , circa. 1870.(below)..... | 101 |
| Figure 68: Information about Nadia Myre and Wampum | 102 |
| Figure 69: Nadia Myre, <i>Monument to Two-Row, Revised</i> , 2000-02. unknown, Huron, Canada, Wampum belt, circa. 1879 (bottom). <i>Fabrics of Change: Trading Identities</i> by Wood Conroy et al. p.45 & 48..... | 103 |
| Figure 70: 'Chronicle of Days', Sewn hair on napkins, artist: Anne Wilson. | 105 |
| Figure 71: Narelle Jubelin of a textiles design by Marion Mahony Griffin. acrylic wall paint in <i>Reinventing Textiles: Postcolonialism and Creativity</i> Vol. 3, Paul Sharrad and Anne Collett (eds),Telos Art Publishing, Bristol, 2004. | 109 |
| Figure 72: Richard Serra , <i>Shift</i> , 1970-72. all images from <i>Richard Serra/Sculpture</i> , (ed. R. Krauss), The Museum of Modern Art, New York, 1986..... | 110 |
| Figure 73: Richard Serra, view from interior of <i>Slat</i> , 1980-84. | 111 |
| Figure 74: Richard Serra, <i>To Lift</i> , 1967..... | 112 |
| Figure 75: Richard Serra, <i>Tilted Arc</i> , 1981. | 113 |
| Figure 76: Richard Serra, <i>Splashing</i> , 1968..... | 118 |
| Figure 77: Richard Serra, <i>Terminal</i> , 1977 | 121 |
| Figure 78: Greek Theatre: Plan of Theatre at Eretria, Fig.64. <i>The Theatre of Dionysus in Athens</i> . A.W Pickard-Cambridge, Oxford University Press, 1973..... | 128 |

| | |
|--|-----|
| Figure 79: Lettering inscription detail of names on <i>Vietnam Veteran's Memorial</i> . Maya Lin <i>Boundaries</i> , Simon & Schuster, 2000. p. 4.22/23, 'A typographer will compose a text line by line for the printed page; when text is incised in stone, the engraving begins to take on more life than a normal or standard typeface'. | 131 |
| Figure 80: Maya Lin, detail of inscription of historical events on <i>Civil Rights Memorial</i> . Maya Lin <i>Boundaries</i> . Simon & Schuster, 2000. p. 4.25 | 133 |
| Figure 81: Detail of inscription of years and numbers on <i>The Women's Table</i> . p. 4.37, Maya Lin <i>Boundaries</i> . Simon & Schuster, 2000. "It is a water table to commemorate the twentieth anniversary of Yale admitting women to its undergraduate class. The use of numbers to count the women enrolled was very important." | 134 |
| Figure 82: Granite table where people can sit and congregate Maya Lin, <i>The Women's Table</i> , Maya Lin <i>Boundaries</i> . Simon & Schuster, 2000. | 135 |
| Figure 83: Maya Lin, <i>The Women's Table</i> , 1993. Maya Lin <i>Boundaries</i> . Simon & Schuster, 2000. | 136 |
| Figure 84: Maya Lin, <i>The Vietnam Veteran's Memorial</i> . Maya Lin <i>Boundaries</i> . Simon & Schuster, 2000. | 137 |
| Figure 85: Doris Salcedo, <i>Atrabiliarios</i> (detail), 1992. Installation, Wall niches, shoes, animal fibre, surgical thread. Dimensions variable, 'Currents 92: The Absent Body', Institute of Contemporary Art, Boston. Nancy Princenthal, Carlos Basualdo & Andreas Huyssen, <i>Doris Salcedo</i> . p. 48 | 141 |
| Figure 86: Doris Salcedo, <i>Untitled</i> 1995. Wood, fabric, bones 257.5 x 46.5 x 33 cm 'Currents 92: The Absent Body', Institute of Contemporary Art, Boston. Nancy Princenthal, Carlos Basualdo & Andreas Huyssen, <i>Doris Salcedo</i> . p. 68 | 142 |
| Figure 87: <i>The Widowed House</i> . Doris Salcedo, <i>La Casa Viuda 1V</i> , (detail) 1994. Nancy Princenthal, Carlos Basualdo & Andreas Huyssen, <i>Doris Salcedo</i> , p 111 | 144 |
| Figure 88: <i>The Orphan's Tunic</i> Doris Salcedo, <i>Unland: The Orphan's Tunic</i> (detail) 1997. Nancy Princenthal, Carlos Basualdo & Andreas Huyssen, <i>Doris Salcedo</i> p 112. | 145 |
| Figure 89: Doris Salcedo, <i>Unland: Audible in the Mouth</i> , 1998. Wood, thread, hair. 74.5 x 315 x 80 cm; Nancy Princenthal, Carlos Basualdo & Andreas Huyssen, <i>Doris Salcedo</i> . p.139. Collection, Tate Gallery, London | 146 |
| Figure 90: Doris Salcedo, <i>Atrabiliarios</i> , 1993. Wall niches, shoes, animal fibre, surgical thread. Dimensions variable. Nancy Princenthal, Carlos Basualdo & Andreas Huyssen, <i>Doris Salcedo</i> . p. 53, | 150 |

| | |
|---|-----|
| Figure 91: Doris Salcedo, <i>Atrabiliarios</i> , (detail) 1993. | 151 |
| Figure 92: Seed, shuttle and damask linen. <i>Flax to Fabric: The Story of Irish Linen</i> , Brenda Collins. An Irish Linen Centre & Lisburn Museum Publication, 1994. p.35. | 155 |
| Figure 93: example of Irish traditional Mountmellick embroidered bed cover (detail): the wide border 35cm Biblical and historic characters. Made in Westport, Co Mayo about 1830; completed during the long voyage to Australia in 1850. <i>A Collection in Australia</i> , Ref #55. | 156 |
| Figure 94: Quilts made by civilian internees of Changi Gaol: one with a message for the Nipponese soldiers 134x165cm (53x65ins) and another message for the Australian soldiers 130x203cm (51x80ins) Collection Australian War Memorial, Canberra. <i>Australian Quilt Heritage</i> Margaret Rolfe, J B Fairfax Press Pty Ltd., 1998. p. 77. | 158 |
| Figure 95: <i>The ILM</i> entrance corridor: braided rope made by Lan (Loretta) Lu. Faculty of Creative Arts, University of Wollongong Thesis exhibition, February, 2005. model: Bodie O'Dell; photo Sean Maguire. | 164 |
| Figure 96: <i>The Irish Linen Memorial</i> , Thesis exhibition, February, 2005 - hundreds of handkerchiefs, printed with ten names each, approximately 12 inches square - grid configuration with cotton strips; approximately 2ft H off of the floor in a slight slope Faculty of Creative Arts, University of Wollongong photo Sean Maguire. | 166 |
| Figure 97: <i>The ILM</i> entrance/exit corridor: with braided rope. Faculty of Creative Arts, University of Wollongong Thesis exhibition, February, 2005. model: Robert Trouton; photo Sean Maguire. | 169 |
| Figure 98: From 'Ireland on Fast-Forward' by Richard Conniff <i>National Geographic</i> , September 1994 p. 12. | 170 |